



DUKE UNIVERSITY

---

LIBRARY

---

The Glenn Negley Collection  
of Utopian Literature

Library Budget  
Fund

THE  
REVERIE:  
*Johnstone* O R,  
A FLIGHT  
TO THE  
PARADISE of FOOLS.

---

*—All things vain, and all who in vain things  
Build their fond hopes of glory, or lasting fame,  
Or happiness, in this, or th' other life—*

MILTON.

---

Published by the EDITOR of  
The ADVENTURES of a GUINEA.

---

V O L. II.

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed for T. BECKET, and P. A. DA HONDT;  
in the Strand. MDCCLXIII.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

500 N. 5TH ST. NEW YORK, N. Y.

TO THE

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION  
500 N. 5TH ST. NEW YORK, N. Y.

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION

500 N. 5TH ST. NEW YORK, N. Y.

LIBRARY OF THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION  
500 N. 5TH ST. NEW YORK, N. Y.



RRR  
J66K  
V. 2

THE  
CONTENTS  
OF THE  
SECOND VOLUME.

---

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

*The scheme changes with the scene. A remarkable instance of military equity. The soldier's view in war. Every man for himself, the rule in war as well as peace,* 1

CHAP. II.

*A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The best cure for a matrimonial surfeit; with a new motive for entering into the military life,* 7

CHAP. III.

*A toilet set out in a new taste. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience against another; with an interesting instance of love and honour in the modern style,* 15

A

CHAP.

19711

# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. IV.

*War ! Horrid war ! They'll never want employment who think themselves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moon-shine. The great channel of secret intelligence,*

23

## CHAP. V.

*The longest way about is often the nearest way home. The pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship in affliction. A new species of knight-errantry,*

28

## CHAP. VI.

*History of a remarkable lady. The great benefit of polite education, with the force of good example. Common occurrences of various kinds, and their natural consequences,*

33

## CHAP. VII.

*Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of reputation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few possess ; with a curious account of a man of consequence,*

40

## CHAP. VIII.

*Continued. A short way of making love. Bargains best made in few words ; with an odd instance of old-fashioned folly,*

47

## CHAP. IX.

*Continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity, the former kicks the beam,*

51

CHAP

# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. X.

*Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear. The danger of provoking high blood; with the great merit of peace-making in the modern way,*

58

## CHAP. XI.

*Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first disorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horse. The whole concluded with some interesting reflections, which prove that people should look before they leap,*

64

## CHAP. XII.

*One story generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dress. Common consequences of fashionable intimacy, and female friendship, with the secret of making a right use of a shoeing-horn,*

70

## CHAP. XIII.

*More military matters. Politics on one side of the question,*

76

## CHAP. XIV.

*A new scheme of carrying on a war. An ill-timed doubt often disconcerts a good story. Anecdotes of a loyal family. The history of Sir Archibald, and Zelide princesses of Armenia,*

83

## CHAP. XV.

*The History of Sir Archibald, and Zelide princesses of Armenia, continued,*

96

## CHAP. XVI.

*Continuation of the history of Sir Archibald and Zelide, princesses of Armenia,*

104

# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. XVII.

*The history of Sir Archibald, and Zelide princess of Armenia, concluded,* 110

## CHAP. XVIII.

*Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several instances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common manner, with some reflections interesting to those whom they may concern,* 119

## CHAP. XIX.

*The difference between fighting battles in the field and in the cabinet. The happiness of having good friends, with further instances of military equity,* 123

## CHAP. XX.

*War ! War in procinct ! The comforts of Greatness. A night-scene, with a continuation of it, neither of the most agreeable nature,* 128

## CHAP. XXI.

*An approved medicine for a sick mind. A curious conversation between two great persons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame,* 135

## CHAP. XXII.

*A remarkable instance of poetic gratitude and justice, with some anecdotes of a celebrated genius,* 143



---

## B O O K II.

### C H A P. I.

*A council scene. The mildness of female government; with a remarkable instance of the happy effect of reproof upon great minds,* 148

### C H A P. II.

*A ready salve for a sore conscience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected disappointment shews greatness of soul in a striking light. A day concluded consistently,* 154

### C H A P. III.

*More happy effects of greatness; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power,* 161

### C H A P. IV.

*Account of an uncommon kind of council; with its natural conclusion,* 166

### C H A P. V.

*Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortune,* 172

### C H A P. VI.

*Continued. A mirror for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue,* 177

C H A P.

# C O N T E N T S.

## C H A P. VII.

*Mystery of favouritism concluded. The necessary effects of ridicule. Ministerial use of unlimited power; with the natural consequence of ill placed confidence,* 183

## C H A P. VIII.

*The scene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs,* 188

## C H A P. IX.

*Wheels within wheels. Certain great transactions deduced from unsuspected causes; with the advantage of having two strings to a bow,* 194

## C H A P. X.

*More great matters. Home truths. A character out of nature; with a new definition of the laws of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience,* 199

## C H A P. XI.

*A peep behind the curtain. Royal amusements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved shield against certain terrible dangers,* 206

## C H A P. XII.

*Scene changed. Pleasant instance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritism,* 211

## C H A P. XIII.

*Make hay while the sun shines. All go to the market, where they can have most for their money.*

## CONTENTS.

*money. A conversation concluded in character,*  
221

### CHAP. XIV.

*A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The fascination of ease,*  
225

### CHAP. XV.

*The scene changed. A pleasing prospect suddenly over-cast. An easy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaister for a broken head. He that throws dirt always fouls his fingers,*  
231

### CHAP. XVI.

*A receipt for popularity. Turn a cast horse to graze on a common. The old steward acts the second part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye,*  
238

### CHAP. XVII.

*An holiday, and a jolly day. A sumptuous feast, and a raree-sheew,*  
244

### CHAP. XVIII.

*"Impresses quaint caparisons, and steeds ;  
"Bases, and tinsel trappings ; gorgeous knights,  
"Then marshall'd feast  
"Serv'd up in hall, with sewers and senechals."*  
251

### CHAP. XIX.

*In what the greatest are easiest to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if less ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances,*  
261

# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. XX.

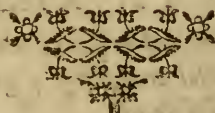
*He that plays at BOWLS must meet RUBS. The biter DRUB'D. An old fox caught napping. A penny saved is a penny got. Splendid œconomy; with the unfortunate candle-adventure. A mortifying instance of the force of vanity,* 265

## CHAP. XXI.

*Interesting hints, which set some matters much canvassed in a new light,* 274

## CHAP. XXII.

*Disputes will arise, where every man is for himself. A sure method of removing scruples, and reconciling opposite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER finished. The conclusion,* 279





---

---

# THE R E V E R I E;

O R, A

Flight to the Paradise of Fools.

---

## C H A P. I.

*The scheme changes with the scene. A remarkable instance of military equity. The soldier's view in war. Every man for himself, the rule in war as well as peace.*

**T**HE feats of heroism, and the glory, which according to the general prejudices of mankind, I had been accustomed to associate with the idea of war, made me promise myself much pleasure from this change. The spirit read my sentiments in my looks, and smiling expressively, “ You are now going to take a view of scenes, “ (said he) the nature of which will make your “ utmost care requisite, to escape the illusions  
VOL. II. B “ which

“ which surround them on every side, and are  
 “ so strong as to deceive the very actors of them.  
 “ The limitation of the human faculties makes  
 “ it necessary, that objects should be presented  
 “ to you in a regular succession; as that general  
 “ view which conveys knowledge intuitively  
 “ to superior beings, would only dazzle your  
 “ mind, and involve it in perplexity and confusion.  
 “ But this the more important duties  
 “ of my office will not permit my attending to,  
 “ at present. I have already devoted as much  
 “ time to your gratification as I can spare. You  
 “ must therefore proceed alone, and make your  
 “ own observations. For this reason it will be  
 “ proper to place you immediately in the scene  
 “ of action. Your attention will there be freed  
 “ from the distraction of a more distant and  
 “ complicated view; and you shall have other  
 “ assistances, to remedy the inconvenience of  
 “ my absence.”—— Saying this, he took my  
 hand, and transported me, instantaneously, in  
 the same manner as before, into the country  
 which was the seat of the war.

High as my expectations had been, this nearer  
 view of the paths of human glory chilled my  
 soul. I turned my eyes away in horror; and,  
 in the instinctive impulse of affright, moved  
 close to my guide for protection. “ I have  
 “ often cautioned you (resumed he, in an ac-  
 “ cent of reproof) against forming your judge-  
 “ ment of any thing too precipitately. But  
 “ now you were delighted at the thought of  
 “ this prospect. In a moment, you sicken at  
 “ the sight. Is this consistent with the charac-  
 “ ter of a rational being? Your present fears  
 “ of danger to yourself are as idly groundless,

“ as your hopes of receiving pleasure, from be-  
“ holding the miseries of others, were then un-  
“ justifiable. I have told you, that your form  
“ is imperceptible to human sense. It is also  
“ impassive to the injuries which affect morta-  
“ lity, under all the weakness and imperfections  
“ of which you see the beings before you la-  
“ bour, as strongly as when in your world.  
“ You may therefore mix with the multitude  
“ without apprehension, and make your re-  
“ marks on every thing that occurs, with deli-  
“ beration and ease; to enable you to do which,  
“ I have freed your mind from the prejudices  
“ that have hitherto obstructed your reason, so  
“ that you will now behold all things in their  
“ genuine colours; and as some knowledge of  
“ the past lives of the persons concerned in the  
“ scenes you are going to enter into, may oc-  
“ casionally be necessary to explain their present  
“ actions, your faculties are enlarged with a  
“ power of looking back, and reviewing the  
“ whole series, as readily and distinctly as you  
“ do the objects recorded in your memory.  
“ Your motions also, as you are unincumbered  
“ with matter, depend absolutely on your will,  
“ by a single act of which you may transport  
“ yourself whither-soever you please, in an in-  
“ stant; and so trace the most complicated  
“ transactions through all their intricate extent,  
“ from their obscure causes, to their as unex-  
“ pected conclusions, with precision and per-  
“ spicuity. A right use of these advantages will  
“ give your curiosity the most rational satisfac-  
“ tion. Nor are you confined to any particu-  
“ lar scene. When your soul is surfeited with  
“ war, and sickens at the thought of military  
“ glory,

“glory, you are at liberty to seek new subjects  
“of remark, through all the wide extent of  
“human life, which is expanded to your view.  
“One thing, though, I must caution you  
“against, Forget not that you are a meer un-  
“concerned spectator of all the events you be-  
“hold; nor presume on any account to inter-  
“pose, be they ever so interesting to you. The  
“least attempt of this kind will instantaneously  
“deprive you for-ever of the indulgence you  
“now enjoy. I am summoned hence. When  
“it is proper to reconduct you to the world of  
“man, I will attend. Till then, observe the cau-  
“tion I have given you, and proceed without  
“farther limitation or restraint.”— With these  
words he vanished from my sight.

The first emotions of my surprize at being left in such a condition may be easily conceived. But they lasted not long. I soon felt the advantages of the favours bestowed so liberally upon me; in the consciousness of which I lost all fear, and directly prepared to avail myself of them, in the most extensive manner. The more than martial animosity with which this war appeared, by the desolation of the country, and the miseries of the inhabitants, to be carried on, made me conclude that it must have arisen from some most important cause. To learn this I directly entered into the army that lay nearest to me, where I imagined I should readily receive the information I wanted; judging that every individual must be acquainted with the motives for a war in which he hazarded his life, and of course they must be the subject of the general conversation.



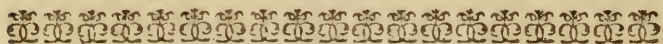
The army was composed of mercenaries of different nations hired by a foreign power, whose own subjects made a considerable part of it, tho' under the supreme command of one of the former; and was led hither, into the country of an ally and friend, according to the rules of military equity, to defend the sovereign's own dominions from the invasion of an enemy, who with equal justice marched his forces to the indiscriminate oppression of friends and foes, through whose territories they passed, to wreak his vengeance on this part of his adversary's subjects, for injuries he imagined he had received from another, who were superior to his power, and with whom these had no connection in nature or interest, other than (in this case) the misfortune of being under the government of the same sovereign.

This general account I soon learned, and saw abundantly confirmed, both by the appearance of the army, and the manner of its proceeding; but of the real origin of the war, or the end proposed by it, except *plunder* and *pay*, the soldiers appeared utterly ignorant, and indeed unconcerned about them, plodding mechanically to the field to fight, with as much indifference as oxen do to plough.

Shocked at an insensibility so disgraceful to beings who boast of the blessing of reason, I advanced to the commander, from whom I hoped to learn something satisfactory, in matters so immediately conducted by himself. He was sitting in his tent, at a table covered with dispatches he had just received from the court by which he was employed. When he had looked them over, with evident phlegm, and

disregard. “ These people (said he) must think  
“ me as great a fool as themselves, to send  
“ me such orders; orders which common  
“ sense might inform them I will not obey.  
“ The people are out of humour, forsooth, at  
“ the length and expence of the war; and so  
“ their wise masters want me to push it with  
“ more vigour, to bring it to a conclusion. But  
“ they will find themselves mistaken, I promise  
“ them. No! No! I will have no general  
“ actions; nothing that can possibly be decisive  
“ either way. That is not my business. The  
“ profits of my command are too considerable  
“ to be thrown away in that manner. If I  
“ should be beaten, they will instantly chuse  
“ another general, without ever considering  
“ that I only obeyed their own orders. And if  
“ I obtain a compleat victory, the war is at  
“ an end; and of course my profit also. No!  
“ No! I will have no decisive actions. While  
“ they are masters of a ducat to pay me, I will  
“ protract the war. When their money is all  
“ spent, they may go to battle as soon as they  
“ will; and whether they win or lose, is a mat-  
“ ter of indifference to me. In the mean time,  
“ they shall have marching, and skirmishing  
“ enough, to satisfy their passion for fighting,  
“ and prevent their complaining of idleness. I  
“ am commander in chief; and while I am, I  
“ will do just what I please, which is to promote  
“ my own interest as much as I possibly can.  
“ If I can manage matters so, as to hold my  
“ post for two or three campaigns more, I shall  
“ get money enough to support the dignity of  
“ my illustrious house with proper splendour.  
“ Nor is it possible for them to detect my de-  
sign.

“ sign. The disproportion in numbers between  
 “ my army, and that of the enemy, is such as  
 “ sufficiently justifies my cautious conduct ; at  
 “ the same time, that the difference in the ap-  
 “ pointments and goodness of the men secures  
 “ me from danger of disgrace, and makes the  
 “ glory I acquire in this defensive war cheaply  
 “ earned. Indeed the greatest difficulty often  
 “ is to divide their force, and direct their ar-  
 “ dour in such a manner, as to prevent their  
 “ defeating their enemies totally, against all  
 “ disadvantages, and contrary to my inten-  
 “ tions.”



## CHAP. II.

*A gilded bait to catch a gudgeon. The best cure for  
 a matrimonial surfeit ; with a new motive for  
 entering into the military life.*

HAVING finished his meditations, he went out to a number of his officers, who attended at the entrance of his tent. His behaviour on this occasion shewed the masterly address with which he pursued his private scheme: To his own countrymen he spoke with the utmost indifference ; and giving them some general orders about the duties of the camp, dismissed them slightly, and with an appearance of disesteem. But to the foreigners by whose sovereign he was employed, he carried himself in quite a different manner. His eye wore a smile of familiarity and complaisance, whenever it met the meanest subaltern of the corps ; and he scrupled

pled not to compliment them, at the expence of the rest of the army, by proposing their example to general imitation.

So flattering a preference had the designed effect; the fatigues and dangers by which they acquired it were immediately forgot; and they even appeared eager to undertake more, to support so distinguished an honour.

The general saw with secret pleasure the ardour with which he had inflamed them; and resolved he would not let it cool, for want of employment. Advancing to their particular commander, who just then joined him, “My  
“ dear friend, (said he, with an air of the most  
“ cordial esteem) I have this moment received  
“ some intelligence, that enables me to give  
“ your brave countrymen an opportunity of  
“ signalizing that valour which has established  
“ them in the exalted reputation of being the  
“ best soldiers in the universe. You will select  
“ five thousand whom you think most proper,  
“ and let them be ready to march an hour before  
“ night. When you return from doing  
“ that, we will concert our measures, and fix  
“ on a person to carry them into execution. It  
“ is a master-stroke, and will do honour to any  
“ officer; for I cannot doubt of the success of  
“ an enterprize undertaken by your gallant  
“ countrymen.”

The officer, who free from deceit himself, suspected none in any body else, heard him with the highest joy, and glowing with a passion for glory, which the general thus artfully fann'd, resolved, without even waiting to know the nature of the attempt, to take the command himself, and so reap all the honour. “Your High-  
“ nefs



“ nefs (answered he, with evident emotion )  
 “ does them honour by all your commands. I  
 “ shall not have any occasion for selecting,  
 “ where all are equally good, and equally am-  
 “ bitious of meriting your approbation. As  
 “ for an officer for the command, I believe I  
 “ can find one to whom, I hope, your High-  
 “ nefs will have no objection.”

Saying this, he proceeded directly to get every thing ready, while the rest of the army, instead of being offended at having the post of honour thus partially given from them, hugged themselves in the ease and safety they enjoyed by the disgrace.

There was something so striking in the readiness with which the officer caught at the bait that was laid for him, that I became some-how anxious for the event, and resolved to observe him particularly through the affair; and therefore followed him, when he went to give the necessary orders to his men.

If I had been surprised at the ardour he shewed, I was infinitely more so, to find that the same spirit ran through all his countrymen; the very private soldiers, whose station might have been supposed to exempt them from the enthusiastic notions of honour which idleness and affluence inspire in the more exalted ranks, to such a degree as to make men break through the first law of nature, to run into danger with delight, *turning out* to a man, at the first mention of the matter; and vying with each other who should be of the party; though the appearance of many of them shewed that they were already exhausted by fatigue, and wanted rest and refreshment, to re-

store their strength to any degree of equality with their spirit.

Among men actuated by such an emulation, the least preference must have bred envy, and been attended with disagreeable consequences. Sensible of this, the officer thanked them all, in the most engaging manner for their readiness; but said, that, according to the indispensable rule of military discipline, he must necessarily take those whose duty came in turn, consoling the rest with the thought that they could not long want an opportunity equally glorious of proving their spirit in an army, where they were honoured by the general, with so peculiar a preheminance.

This delicate affair being adjusted, the heroes whose happy fortune it was to go prepared themselves with the highest emulation, while the others drew off in evident dejection at their disappointment.

As their leader rode along the lines, to take a particular view of them, I observed that he addressed one of his subalterns, and was answered by him in a strain of familiarity, that seemed inconsistent with the distance between their stations. “ Well *Tom*, (said the former, “ with a smile) this is a sudden call. How “ will *Venus* bear to have her *Mars* torn from “ her arms so soon? She ought to have a little “ longer time to reconcile her to the military “ life, before she is left by herself in a camp.”

—— “ In a camp! No! no! I shall hardly “ leave her in a camp.”

—— “ No! What then do you design to do “ with her? ”

—— “ Why? send her to indulge her medi-  
“ tations

“ tations with her old friend, *Will Buck's*  
 “ Lady. It will be good entertainment for  
 “ them to compare notes.”

—— “ But if you did not mean to keep her  
 “ here, why were you at the trouble of bring-  
 “ ing her? I imagined it was because you did  
 “ not know how to part with her.”

—— “ How to part with her! I thought you  
 “ knew me better than to think so. Why,  
 “ man! the very contrary was the reason. If  
 “ I did not desire to part with her, what should  
 “ make me bring her here? No! No! It is  
 “ not come to that with me yet. I turned sol-  
 “ dier, at first, merely to get rid of my wife;  
 “ and I hope I may be allowed to take the same  
 “ method to get rid of my mistress too, when  
 “ I am equally tired of her. Beside, I have a  
 “ better plea now than I had before. My ho-  
 “ nour, man! My honour is engaged. I must  
 “ not quit my colours upon any account, at  
 “ such a time as this. If the fond charmer  
 “ should take pet, and go home to her friends,  
 “ with her finger in her eye, to be revenged on  
 “ her swain for his indifference, she has my sin-  
 “ cere consent; nor shall my best assistance be  
 “ wanting to make an honest woman of her, by  
 “ getting her a good husband. She has examples  
 “ enough to keep her in countenance. But if  
 “ the constant dove will not desert her roving  
 “ mate, why, faith, I do not well know how  
 “ to send her back against her will; and must  
 “ in compassion pay her a visit now and then;  
 “ though, by the by, it shall be as seldom as  
 “ possible, to give her company something like  
 “ novelty; which, in my opinion, is the only  
 “ thing.

“ thing that can make the company of any woman tolerable.”

——“ But, won’t this be breaking faith with her? I presume you must have made her many fine promises of love and constancy, before you could bring her to take such a step?”

——“ Promises! Aye, promises enough for the matter of that; but she was a fool if she believed them, when she had a proof that I should not keep them, before her eyes. She could not be so blindly vain, as not to know that novelty was the only advantage she had over my wife, whom I may probably return to by and by, for the same reason, when a campaign or two shall have sharpened my appetite. A campaign is the best remedy in nature for a matrimonial surfeit. It cures a man’s qualms, and sends him home as keen as a country-bridegroom.”

——“ But, are you sure that she will leave you so readily? The same spirit that enabled her to come to such a place as this, may dispute your authority to send her back. She has paid a dear price for your company, and may not chuse to give it up. Women when once they love have much more constancy in their temper than men.”

——“ Constancy! Say rather, obstinacy. But I have taken care of that matter. I have wrote a letter to my wife, in which I made professions of the highest esteem, and desired the favour of her company, to complete my happiness; promising, that *Chloe* and I would study her satisfaction and pleasure in every instance.”

——“ Good



——“ Good Heavens! What could you  
 “ propose by that? You could never think she  
 “ would be mean, or mad enough, to ac-  
 “ cept of such an invitation; an invitation,  
 “ that only added insult to the ill-treatment  
 “ you had given her before.”

“ Accept of it! No, I neither expected nor  
 “ desired that. I had schemes of a very diffe-  
 “ rent kind in view. I know you have never  
 “ suspected me, for forming any deep designs;  
 “ but this will convince you of the contrary.  
 “ This Letter, little as you think of it, will  
 “ serve two very important purposes. It will  
 “ prevent my wife from obtaining a separate  
 “ maintenance out of my estate; for, as it is  
 “ her duty to follow me wherever I please, she  
 “ cannot now pretend that I have abandoned  
 “ her: and, on the other hand, it gives me  
 “ an opportunity, at this and any other time,  
 “ to get rid of my mistress’s company, by tell-  
 “ ing her, that my invitation is accepted; for  
 “ she would fly to the extremity of the globe  
 “ rather than meet her. He! What think you  
 “ now? Am not I a good politician? Egad, I  
 “ always mistook my talents; if I had applied  
 “ myself in time, I might have been prime mi-  
 “ nister before now. Ha! ha! ha!”—

——“ If you were conscious of this incon-  
 “ stancy in your temper, how came you to  
 “ marry? That should have been the last thing  
 “ I would have done.”

——“ That is very true. But Sir *John*  
 “ *Brute*’s reason was mine. I wanted to go to  
 “ bed to her, and she would not consent on  
 “ any other terms: the consequence of which  
 “ was, that when my end was obtained, I grew  
 “ tired

“tired of my bargain, and so turned soldier to get quit of it.”

——“I am surpris’d to hear you say this. I always understood that you had other motives for your military turn; an ambition of command, and thirst for glory.”

——“Very true. Glory and command are pretty things, to be sure; but they are not equally the passion of all people. Your good luck in losing your wife, made me hope that my turtle would have broken her heart, in the same manner; but she was not so obliging; and therefore I have tried this method of preferring another publicly to her. I know the force of female vanity; and if this scheme should luckily succeed, I’ll give up my hopes of a truncheon, and retire as *Scipio* and other great men have done. If I once get my neck out of the yoke, I’ll take care how I thrust it in again, or even enter into any connection that I cannot break when I please, without being obliged to have recourse to this expedient. No! No! I am not quite so fond of glory as you are. I can be content at home; that is, when I am master of my own house.”

“Is it possible that you can be serious? This is so contrary to the opinion of all your friends, that I must believe you only jest. Your birth and fortune give you a title to the highest employments in the state, in whatever capacity you chose to apply yourself; and we all thought, that preferring the military, as the most honourable, you had come hither to qualify yourself for them.”

——“Aye!

——“ Aye ! as you have done ! And pray,  
 “ what are you the better ? In reward of all  
 “ your fatigues and dangers, you have the ho-  
 “ nour to be put under the command of a fo-  
 “ reigner, who would not presume to put him-  
 “ self upon a level with you in any other light ;  
 “ and laughs at you in his sleeve, for your con-  
 “ descension. Very fine encouragement, true-  
 “ ly ! No ! No ! Let the poor fight for pay, you  
 “ and I want it not ; and all the real advantages  
 “ of honour our ancestors, blessings on their  
 “ memory for their pains, have transmitted to us.  
 “ Let us then enjoy the happiness that is in our  
 “ possession, and not lose the substance thus,  
 “ to grasp at the shadow.”

The other, who had listened to him before with contempt, was so struck with the latter part of his discourse, that he rode away abruptly to avoid hearing any more of it.



### C H A P. III.

*A toilet set out in a new taste. The advantage of knowing how to play one inconvenience against another ; with an interesting instance of love and honour in the modern style.*

**T**HIS extraordinary conversation raising my curiosity to see the fair female who had originally been the subject of it, I followed her lover, while his leader was preparing for his expedition.

She was sitting alone in his tent, in a situa-  
 tion

tion not easy to be described. Educated in the lap of luxury, she had multiplied the wants of nature ten-thousand-fold; and required assistance every moment for necessities created by caprice. Though her lover's fortune placed her above the real distresses of such a place, and supplied her with most of the conveniences, as well as all the necessaries of life, she had numberless artificial occasions, which habit had made in a manner indispensable to her, and which, as it was impossible to provide for then, in such a vague unsettled state, she exerted as much contrivance to supply, as had first enabled human ingenuity to find out the most important conveniences of life; though with this essential difference; that as the end was fantastic here, the means necessarily appeared ridiculous.

We found her at her toilet, which was a sumpter-trunk, set upon one end, and covered with a foul shirt. On this she had placed a pocket-mirroure, and on each side of that a row of phials, and gallipots filled with colours, cosmetic paste and washes which she always carried about her. Her combs and brushes were set out on the saucers she had just been using for breakfast. Her shoes and stockings lay on the bed, which was also her seat; and to wash herself, she made use of an utensil, which had been placed under it for another occasion. With this apparatus, all set in form, she was as attentively busy at the important work of dressing, as if she was going to make her appearance at a drawing-room. Her lover's entrance interrupted her. "Fie, *Damon*, (said she, blushing at the ridiculous figure she made) how can you intrude so rudely into a lady's ruelle?"

"You



“ You see I have set out my toilet. The bed  
 “ and the trunk serve for every thing. Dumb  
 “ waiters are sometimes most convenient; hah!  
 “ hah! hah!”

The moment I saw her, I could perceive that this gaiety was all affected; that, sick at heart, she flew to levity for relief from the torture of reflection. Such a ruin was sufficient to raise compassion in any mind not utterly lost to every sense of humanity, as well as virtue. She was just entered into the prime of life; her form elegant and striking; and her features, if not faultlessly beautiful, yet glowing with such luxuriant health, such animated sensibility, as had the effect of the most perfect beauty. But in her present situation, all these charms appeared to disadvantage. A gloom of conscious guilt overcast her smiles; and amidst all her mirth and endearments, she was ashamed to look up, and meet the eye of the very author of her shame.

When she had forced out the laugh with which she concluded the above speech, her *Damon*, smiling with an air of indifference, “ Necessity is the mother of invention, my dear  
 “ *Chloe*; (said he) and yours seems to have been  
 “ well set to work. But I come to tell you some  
 “ news that I fear will interrupt you. I am  
 “ ordered out upon action directly; and as it  
 “ is like to be a warm affair, I think it is bet-  
 “ ter to provide for your safety before I go,  
 “ for fear of any thing’s happening to me.  
 “ You would be horridly at a loss by your-  
 “ self, in such a place as this, if I should be  
 “ killed.”

She started at the mention of action; but his  
 last

last words struck her with terrors too strong for her to bear. For some moments she stood like the statue of horror, unable to move or speak; but her very fears at length gave her utterance. "Good heaven! (exclaimed she) What do you mean? What action can you be ordered into that should endanger your life? Did you not promise me, that you would quit this accursed life directly? Did you not prevail upon me to come here with you, only that you might lay down your commission without disrepute? You cannot, shall not, think of going into any action! You must come away this moment."

—"That was my design, my dear, if it had not been for this unlucky affair; but now it is impossible for me to stir. If I return, I will that moment lay down; but I cannot possibly do it sooner. It would be an eternal blot upon my honour."

—"Honour! (returned she, with a sigh, that seemed to burst her heart) How can you mention that word to me? If you are resolved to go, I will wait the event here. Should you be brought back wounded, my care may not be unnecessary! If worse should happen, the horrors I shall suffer till I receive the account, will compleat my aversion to life, and make me glad to follow you. I have now no business in this world without you."

The agony in which she said this would have melted any other heart; but he felt it not. Finding her proof to this argument, he therefore had recourse to his last expedient. "I am much obliged to you, my dear, (said he, quite unmoved) for your kind intentions to take care

“care of me; but I hope I shall not want it.  
 “Beside, there is another thing, which embarrasses me a good deal. I have just received  
 “an account, that my wife, out of her exemplary love and duty, has accepted my invitation, and is coming to us directly.”

“To us! (answered she, alarmed almost to distraction) Is it possible? What shall we do?  
 “Where shall I fly! I never can, never will see her. I had rather die ten thousand deaths, than look her in the face.”

——“To be sure, I allow it must be rather awkward; but the mischief is, I cannot tell how you will avoid it, if you stay here.”

——“You must write to her peremptorily, this moment, not to come; and when you leave this place, take a different route from what you intended, for fear she should not obey you.”

——“Aye! but the worst is, I don’t know where to direct to her. She set out immediately, on receipt of my letter; and as the post is obliged to come so far about, for fear of being intercepted by the enemy, and she travels with passports the shortest way, she may be here this evening, for aught I know: and then it would be so gross an abuse not to see her, even after her undergoing the fatigue of such a journey, at my express desire, that I cannot avoid waiting for her. Decency at least must be observed.”

——“Decency! How can you insult me by mentioning such a word? I slighted that, and every thing else, for you. Had I paid any regard to decency, I should not have been here now in this condition.”

“Nay,

——“Nay, for the matter of that, my dear,  
“I am not much behind you. I shewed as  
“little respect to those things for your sake as  
“you could for mine. But let us not enter  
“into fruitless disputes. What are you re-  
“solved to do? for I must march within this  
“hour.”

——“Honour! decency! But I am justly  
“served. What am I resolved to do! Say ra-  
“ther what you intend to do with me, and do  
“not torture me any longer in this manner;  
“for I see plainly enough, that my presence is  
“a pain, which you want to get rid of at any  
“rate. Honour! just heaven!”

——“Why child, if you are determined to  
“think so, it is in vain to reason with you.  
“You shall do just as you please; either go  
“or stay. What I meant to propose was this:  
“You remember your old friend, who took a  
“frolick with *Will Buck* two or three years  
“ago. She lives in a very pretty retired man-  
“ner, in a neutral town, about twenty miles  
“from hence. Now, if you approve of it, it  
“would be no bad scheme for you, to go and  
“pay her a visit, till we see how things go. I  
“am sure she will be very well pleased to see  
“you; and there you will be free from the in-  
“conveniencies, and safe from the dangers of  
“a camp; and near enough for me to step to  
“you as often as I can spare a moment. I’ll  
“write a letter to *Will* about it directly; and  
“as I know his finances are not in the best  
“situation, I make no doubt but he’ll be very  
“glad of your staying there as long as you  
“please; for you shall have money enough, to  
“bear all the expence. I would not let you  
“be



“ be under obligation to any one. Well, what  
 “ think you of my scheme? Was it not a lucky  
 “ thought? You and she were very intimate  
 “ formerly, and will now be the most proper  
 “ and agreeable companions for each other.”

It is impossible to describe the different passions which were painted in her face, while he was making this proposal. She knew him too well to take such a rational scheme for a sudden thought; and concluded from thence, that he was satiated with her company, and had formed a premeditated design to get rid of her; to facilitate which he had first made a pretence of his being ordered into action, and when that did not take effect, forged this story of his wife's coming; for, notwithstanding her distress, she had observed the many inconsistencies in what he said. However, her pride would not permit her to discover her suspicions, as it would look like striving to force herself longer upon him.

“ When you are resolved, (answered she, with a most expressive look) I have nothing left but to obey. Give orders for my going, I shall soon be ready. All places are indifferent to me, and all companions equally disagreeable. My own thoughts will afford me company enough. I leave you to yours.”

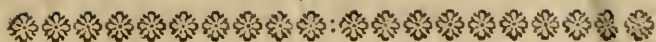
“ My dearest girl, (replied he, more pleased at her compliance than affected at the manner of it) what I propose is for the best. I only study your convenience and satisfaction. If you can think of any other way, I am ready to do it.”

——“ I have no power to think! I wish I never could! But let me be gone. I have staid too long already. Let me not interfere  
 “ with

“with your regard to decency and honour.”  
——Saying this, she directly huddled on her travelling habit, while he went to order his chaise to the door of his tent.

When he had done this, he returned to give her some necessary instructions for her journey, and palliate the offence he had given her, by caresses and professions of love and constancy. She heard him with the most contemptuous silence; and taking a purse of gold, which he gave her, with an air of indignation flung into the chaise the moment it arrived, without speaking a word, or making the least return to his fondness.

The spirit which she shewed on this occasion was evidently raised by resentment; and of course could not last long. Indeed she was scarce able to support it till she got into the chaise, where she melted into a flood of tears before she was out of sight. Her lover saw her distress; but the joy he felt at being freed from her company, prevented his feeling any concern at it. He shrugged up his shoulders in self-complacency; and, hugging himself on his deliverance, prepared to attend his commander at the appointed hour.



## C H A P. IV.

*War ! Horrid war ! They'll never want employment who think themselves well paid for their pains with a mouthful of moon-shine. The great channel of secret intelligence.*

THERE was something so deliberately base in the whole conduct of this person, that I left him with the highest contempt, and returned to his commander, who was by this time ready to wait upon the general to receive his orders.

The moment he entered the tent, the general arose, and, dismissing every other person present, received him with the highest respect. “ Well, my friend, (said he) I am now ready  
“ to communicate to you the plan which I have  
“ formed ; but it will be proper that the per-  
“ son for whom you design the honour of the  
“ command, should be present.”

“ He is present, if your highness makes no  
“ objection to him. I know that all your plans  
“ are formed with judgment ; and as your more  
“ than usual earnestness about this shews it to  
“ be of importance, shall be proud of having  
“ the execution of it entrusted to my care.”

——“ You, my friend ! I know not what  
“ to say ; I cannot spare you from my side. I  
“ want your advice every moment. At the  
“ same time, I am unwilling to rob you of  
“ an opportunity of acquiring so much glory.  
“ Here is the intelligence I have received, and  
“ here

“ here is the scheme I laid down upon it. You  
“ will examine them, and alter any thing you  
“ don’t approve, as circumstances may require.  
“ To you I give a discretionary power, to act  
“ as you see proper. Had I known you would  
“ have gone, I should not have drawn any par-  
“ ticular directions. Go; and success await  
“ you.”

The other received this distinguished mark of confidence and favour with the highest pleasure; and, taking leave of the general, hastened away to join his troops, who were by this time drawn out ready to march. As soon as he had taken a view of them, he opened his instructions; and looking them over, put himself at the head of his men, with whom he marched all night, through woods and morasses deemed impassible, and at day-break found himself just before a quarter of the enemy, who, confiding in the distance and natural strength of their situation, had neglected to fortify themselves, and expected nothing less than to be attacked.

The difficulties of the march had fatigued his troops to such a degree, that it appeared next to madness to let them attack an enemy greatly superior to them in number. But their ardour was such, that they despised every advantage, and demanded to be instantly led on. The proper improvement of that enthusiasm is generally decisive. The commander therefore indulged their impetuosity, confiding in their valour; and convinced that his safety and success equally depended upon surprize, if he failed of which, it would be absolutely impossible for him even to make a retreat in the condition they  
were



were in, through such difficulties as they had struggled with in coming.

Scenes like this are impossible to be particularly described. Accustomed to conquer, they made their onset with a resolution that bore down all before them. In the confusion unavoidable on such occasions, their enemies fled at the first impulse, imagining they were attacked by the whole army, while the victors made an heavy slaughter of all who had no time to escape.

Had they stopped here, the advantage would have been important. But hurried on by their natural ardour, and flushed beside with success, they pursued the fugitives, who by this time had recovered from their first surprize, and formed upon an eminence, not very far from their late camp. The action now was really dreadful. The assailants were several times repulsed with severe loss, and owed their success at last to an effort of meer despair, being determined, to a man, to die rather than have their victory snatched thus out of their hands.

Their loss in this affair equalled that of their enemies, in the surprize of their entrenchments, and amounted to more than half their number; but they remained masters of the field, the honour of which they looked upon as a recompence for all.

On their return to the army the general met them, and embracing the leader, congratulated him on the glory of his victory; and *thanking* the men, in the orders of the day, sent them away happy; while he pleased himself with the success of his scheme, which gave him the appearance of doing something, flattered his em-

ployers with imaginary advantages, and raised his merit with them; at the same time, that in reality it served rather to protract than determine the war, by inspiring each party with a desire of revenging so equal a loss. However, it was deemed sufficient by him to be made the subject of congratulatory messages to the sovereign under whom he served, and all the powers confederate with him.

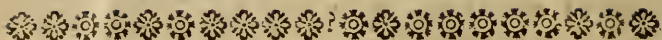
I was so sick of this mercenary method of making war, by which the miseries of that scourge of mankind were so highly aggravated, that I resolved to quit this army directly, and see whether that of the enemy, opposed to it, was conducted in a more rational manner.

I have said that my guide had given me power to transport myself, by a bare act of my will, wherever I pleased. Though this was necessarily a great advantage in many instances, there were yet some circumstances attending it, which made me chuse to decline making use of it, except upon extraordinary occasions. The instantaneous transition from one scene to another, distant and unconnected, was so unusual to me, that it left a chasm in my mind, and made me for some time at a loss to comprehend the things before me, for want of the introduction of entering gradually into them. This I had experienced more than once, when at any time my guide used to turn my eye suddenly and without some previous preparation, to any new scene in the review I made under his immediate direction. For this reason I resolved, when it was possible, to take the opportunity of accompanying some person, wherever I had a mind to go, whose business would serve as a clue, to introduce and direct

rect me without perplexity or confusion; by which method I had also the advantage of observing several things worthy of notice, in the countries through which I passed, which would have escaped me if I only flew over them in the other way.

For such a guide and companion I was not long at a loss. The general that very evening held a council of war, the resolutions of which two of the members could not refrain from talking over that night, after supper. Not suspecting that they were overheard, they canvassed all that had passed very freely, and in the course of their conversation mentioned several matters of the greatest importance to be kept secret. This the valet de chambre of him in whose tent they were was not inattentive to. He was a native of the enemy's country, and retained by them to procure intelligence of every thing that happened in the army where he was. Accordingly he placed himself where he could distinctly hear all that was said; and pretending sleep, to avoid the danger of detection, listened to their discourse with the greatest attention.

As soon as they separated, and he had put his master to bed, he wrote an exact account of all that he had over-heard; and giving his letter to one of his associates, who passed for no more than a common purveyor to the camp, charged him to deliver it as directed, with the utmost expedition, as it was of the highest importance; and this experienced person I resolved to accompany.



## C H A P. V.

*The longest way about is often the nearest way home.  
The pleasure of comparing notes creates friendship  
in affliction. A new species of knight-errantry.*

THE armies lay so near each other that my guide might soon have performed his errand, could he have gone directly with safety. Instead of that, to avoid every suspicion, he took diametrically the contrary way, designing, when he should be out of danger of being observed, to make a turn, and go by a safer though more distant course.

I shall not attempt to describe the country through which we travelled. Could the most ambitious power that ever waged a war view such a scene with the dispassionate eye of reason but for one moment, it would strike his heart with horror, and make him desist from pursuits so destructive to his kind.

The first place we stopped at happened to be the town to which the officer had sent his mistress, as I have said before, under a pretext of her avoiding his wife. I should have taken notice, that in the course of the action he had often repented of not taking her advice, and wished himself to be in safety with her; though when it was over, his heart exulted so much in the success, that for some time he could think of nothing but war and glory. Indeed his behaviour had been such as in a great measure recovered



covered the esteem of his leader ; and with the rest of the army, who have a partiality for the indulgence of passion, and are particularly smitten with the more showy virtues, totally obliterated his reproach.

As we entered the town, I accidentally saw her at a window, and my fellow-traveller stopping for refreshment, I took that opportunity to see how she liked her present situation. When I joined her, she and her friend were going to take a walk in their garden.

There was something particularly striking in the appearance of the latter. Tho' she had never been a regular beauty, and now had lost a good deal of the bloom of youth, it was impossible for man to behold her without desire ; at the same time, that the fire which flashed from her eyes shewed that she felt all the passions she inspired. A similarity in their circumstances had very soon improved their former acquaintance into that degree of intimacy which is commonly called friendship. When they were seated in an arbour at the bottom of the garden, “ I wonder, “ madam, (said the lady of the house) that you “ have had no account from your friend, since “ this action. Public report says it was very “ warm ; but as no particular mention is made “ of him, it is certain he has come off safe. Of- “ ficers of his rank are never overlooked.”

“ Indeed, madam, (answered the other) I “ know not what to attribute it to but the le- “ vity that rules all his actions. I am out of “ his sight, and consequently out of his mind. “ But I have no right to complain. I deserve “ it all, and more, for being such a dupe to “ my own vanity and his base designs, as to “ think



“ think I could fix one whose soul is in-  
 “ stancy itself. My eyes are at length opened  
 “ to my folly. I deserve to be slighted thus,  
 “ and deserted in a strange place.”

——“ Have patience, dear madam ! Do not  
 “ seek for imaginary grievances. It is impos-  
 “ sible he can desert you. No man can be so  
 “ insensible as to slight such charms. The hur-  
 “ ry of war is above our conception, and often  
 “ prevents the performance of the duties dearest  
 “ to the heart.”

——“ O my friend ! you are too good to  
 “ seek consolation for a wretch just sinking  
 “ into despair. But it is all in vain. What  
 “ business had he with war ? His fortune placed  
 “ him above the common motive of necessity ;  
 “ and he assured me that he was sick of the  
 “ folly of ambition, and would retire to some  
 “ private place in Italy, where we should be un-  
 “ known, and there dedicate his life to love  
 “ and happiness. But no sooner had he ob-  
 “ tained his base ends than he changed his  
 “ scheme ; and feigning I know not what rea-  
 “ sons about laying down his commission with  
 “ credit, and such idle stuff, he led me hither,  
 “ just to shew me about, and make the shame  
 “ of my being cast off the more notorious and  
 “ mortifying, perhaps to enhance its merit,  
 “ and prepare the way for a reconciliation with  
 “ his wife, which his writing her that letter  
 “ gives me sufficient ground to think he is not  
 “ without thoughts of.”

——“ For shame, dear madam ! summon  
 “ up your resolution, and do not torture your-  
 “ self with such vain, such impossible appre-  
 “ hensions. I know your good sense, and would  
 “ not

“ not flatter you. A reconciliation with his  
 “ wife is an absurd thought. Not that I think  
 “ it at all improbable, on her part. The soft  
 “ nature of our sex can forgive any thing; but  
 “ the difficulty lies in himself. After giving  
 “ her such treatment, he can never forgive her,  
 “ can never believe she is sincerely reconciled;  
 “ and therefore will hate her for her hypocri-  
 “ sy, and be always in fear of some secret re-  
 “ venge. Or, even if she should convince him  
 “ to the contrary, the contrast between her  
 “ conduct and his, will be so mortifying to him,  
 “ and give her such a superiority in his own  
 “ eyes, that he will never be able to bear it;  
 “ and must avoid her presence, to preserve his  
 “ own peace. This, my dear, is your securi-  
 “ ty against this worst misfortune possible to  
 “ happen to a woman. Shame, poverty, any  
 “ thing, were preferable to being slighted for a  
 “ wife.”

—“ What an infatuated creature was I to  
 “ bring myself into this state, that my happi-  
 “ ness must depend on such a base foundation?  
 “ Happiness, did I say? It is misery; the se-  
 “ verest misery. The constant anxiety and  
 “ fears, inseparable from such a state of uncer-  
 “ tainty, are worse than any actual misfortune.  
 “ But I deserve it all. I am inexcusable in the  
 “ eyes of the world, and odious in my own.  
 “ But what will not the baseness of man and  
 “ the folly of woman do?”

—“ The base artifices of man to obtain  
 “ his ends, and his shameless perfidy after,  
 “ should be a warning to our sex; but  
 “ *Nature is nature, let the wise say what they*  
 “ *will;*” and while woman has vanity and de-

“ fires, man will take advantage of the former,  
“ to flatter her into the gratification of the  
“ latter. You have this consolation, howe-  
“ ver, that your case is not singular. I do not  
“ say, example justifies a wrong action; but  
“ still it certainly is a satisfaction to think, that  
“ others have fallen into as great errors as our-  
“ selves; that we are not the worst of our kind.  
“ All the folly that you upbraid yourself for  
“ have I been guilty of, and with this severe  
“ aggravation, that the person for whom I made  
“ such a sacrifice was not in circumstances even  
“ to delude me with the romantic schemes of  
“ happiness, which helped to turn your head,  
“ but was forced by necessity to apply himself  
“ to the horrid trade of war for subsistence; so  
“ that the pain of his absence, and the fear of  
“ losing him, were heightened by the dreadful  
“ apprehension of being reduced to dependence  
“ on the friends, whose resentment I had so  
“ justly provoked, if any thing should happen to  
“ him. Yet all this have time and reflection re-  
“ conciled me to, and taught me to submit with-  
“ out regret to a fate which I can't remedy.

“ But let us drop this disagreeable and fruit-  
“ less subject. My intercourse with my native  
“ country is so little, that I had not even heard  
“ of your affair till my friend sent me the plea-  
“ sing account of the honour designed me by  
“ your company; and then without any parti-  
“ cular circumstances, which he either was un-  
“ acquainted with, or had not time to write.  
“ As I imagine there must be something un-  
“ common and interesting in them, I shall  
“ esteem it a favour, if you will indulge me  
“ with the relation; and to encourage that  
“ con-

“ confidence, I will candidly inform you of  
 “ every thing concerning myself, the account  
 “ of which, I know, has been greatly and most  
 “ cruelly misrepresented ; and if you do not find  
 “ much entertainment in it, you certainly will  
 “ ample consolation, from a comparison of my  
 “ case with yours. Not that all my adven-  
 “ tures have been barren of matter for the for-  
 “ mer also, now that the danger and ridicule  
 “ which attended them at the time are over.

“ You seem surpris’d, my dear, at my men-  
 “ tioning my adventures ; but ours is literally  
 “ a life of adventure ; and the moment a wo-  
 “ man takes the step that we have done, she  
 “ as it were commences knight-errant, and sal-  
 “ lies forth, if not to seek, at least subject to  
 “ meet adventures wherever she goes ; every  
 “ man who thinks it worth his while assuming  
 “ a right to make his attacks upon her in what  
 “ manner he pleases.”



## C H A P. VI.

*History of a remarkable Lady. The great benefit of  
 polite education, with the force of good example.  
 Common occurrences of various kinds, and their  
 natural consequences.*

“ **T**HERE is nothing more absurdly un-  
 generous than the invectives levelled at  
 our sex indiscriminately, and without inquiring  
 into the nature of our faults, and making just  
 allowances for the causes leading, or rather in-  
 deed impelling us to them.



“ The youth of man is devoted to profitable instruction ; but that of woman to initiation into the paths of ruin. While they are acquiring the general principles of knowledge, or learning some profession for the exercise and advancement of their future lives, we are taught nothing but trifles useless in themselves, and if not immediately criminal, yet leading indirectly to every crime, by turning the mind upon wrong pursuits, and weakning all its powers by an habit of idleness, impossible ever to be broken through ; for idleness, my dear friend, is the bane of woman, let her attribute her failings to whatever other apparent cause she will.

“ The most important part of my story may be comprised in a few words. You are acquainted with my family, and the particular circumstances of it, which made my situation more critically dangerous even than that of the generality of my sex ; a danger that was still heightened by other circumstances peculiar to myself, and which, far from being attended to in that light, and guarded against with proper care, were looked upon as advantages, and accordingly urged to their utmost force.

“ Born in a rank that placed all the pleasures of life within my reach, and blessed with a constitution equal to the enjoyment of them, I seemed marked out for the attacks of man ; the luxuriance of my health kindling all the passions of nature, before reason could gather strength to guide and keep them within proper bounds, and the liberties allowed by fashion giving every opportunity for their gratification. Such an aptitude for pleasure was also forwarded, where it should have met with restraint.



“ There are some persons our relation to whom makes respectful mention of them a duty, be their conduct what it will. I shall therefore only say that, instead of instilling the principles of virtue by precept, and enforcing its practice by example, that person, whose example and precepts must have had the greatest weight with me, exerted them quite the contrary way, turning every thing serious into ridicule, and indulging every licentious passion in the most public manner. The consequence, with regard to me, may be easily concluded. Inclined by nature to pleasure, I willingly imitated the pattern set me as far as was in my power, and launched into every excess, as opportunity tempted; and if I paid greater regard to appearances, and conducted myself with more reserve, it was not from any restraint of principle; but because I saw that fashion did not authorise the same boundless liberty in youth, as it did in more advanced life.

“ But this reserve soon began to be very uneasy to me, and the pleasures I enjoyed, to be confined within narrower limits than I liked. Ripened, as I have said, by the luxuriance of my constitution, I felt all the warmest passions of my sex before it was imagined that my tender youth was capable of such sensations; and was treated like a child long after I thought myself a woman. The difficulties this laid me under were often very disagreeable. I made every explanation that was not a direct breach of decency, and gave hints which would have been readily understood from any one of a more advanced age. But, to my severe mortification, all was attributed to meer imitation; and Miss

was significantly said to echoe her mama's words, when she would much rather have practised her actions.

“ At length, however, I was relieved from this teasing situation, by one of those accidents which determine the fate of human life. As I was sitting one evening at an assembly, fretting myself to death to see several ladies, whom I looked upon as my inferiors in every thing but age, taken out before me, an officer, who read my thoughts and was resolved to have some amusement with me, came up to the place where I sat, and entering into chat with a young lady who was with me, led her to ask him if he did not design to dance; upon which, turning to me with an air of the most respectful politeness, he answered that he would, if I would do him the favour to be his partner.

“ Such a preference, though to one of my most intimate acquaintances, for the manner in which she had asked the question was a plain offer to dance with him herself, was too pleasing to be slighted. I assented most readily, and in the height of my spirits at my triumph, gave such plain hints of the state of my inclinations, that he soon comprehended them; and being somewhat warm with wine, made advances to me which I had long wished for, but never received before.

“ The impression made upon us by a first application is hard to be resisted. For my part, I was too much pleased with it to make the attempt; and really feeling all that warmth he professed, met his wishes more than half way. In such a life as I led, and to persons so disposed, opportunity could not long be wanted;

but when my lover came in a cooler moment to reflect on the consequences of an intrigue with one of my age and rank, should it ever happen to be discovered, prudence damped the ardour of his passion, and prevented his carrying the conquest he had made to the height of our mutual desires. But though he deferred it for the present, he did not absolutely give up the design, when circumstances should wear a more favourable aspect.

“ In families like ours, every person who dressed well and would play had ready admission. He availed himself of this, and, under the appearance of paying a compliment to my mother, took every opportunity of attending me to all places of pleasurable resort.

“ The difference of our age, and particularly his being married, obviated every suspicion of his intentions, as they should have opened my eyes to the infamy and folly of carrying on such a correspondence. But I was incapable of considering any thing beside the pleasure I felt in his company, which was evidently so sincere that, beyond his design, it affected him, and he began also to feel the passion he had only professed before.

“ Though he conducted himself with the utmost circumspection and address, it was impossible to keep up such an intercourse long without the real motive of it being suspected. The first hint of this alarmed the pride of my relations, though the original cause had not been thought worthy of their regard. They instantly assailed me with expostulations and reproaches, as they did my lover with menaces; but all in vain.

“ There is nothing more injudicious than to  
discover

discover a suspicion of what it is not absolutely in our power to prevent. It takes off the restraint of shame, and raises a false resentment that urges the crime in revenge of the injurious accusation. Instead of working the effect my friends designed, this conduct only hastened the consequence which they meant to hinder. Finding they could not themselves break off the intercourse between us, though they knew not certainly to what length it had been carried, they had recourse to superior authority, and prevailed to have my lover sent on an expedition, from which it was more than probable that he would never return; or at least if he did, it must be after such a length of time as they doubted not would wean my affections from him, and fix them on some other more proper object.

“ But all their schemes were disappointed. The expedition miscarried, and he returned before they imagined he had even reached the place of his destination; and far from being cooled in our mutual regards by absence, they rather gathered strength to break out with greater violence.

“ For some time, however, we observed so much caution, as to save appearances at least, let suspicions be what they would. But a gardener surprising us one evening in an arbour, when we thought ourselves safe from observation, though the fellow was highly bribed to secrecy, we thought it imprudent to depend upon him; my lover therefore threw up his commission, and we immediately eloped together out of the reach of my friends’ resentment, who, we were well convinced, would leave nothing undone to be revenged on the



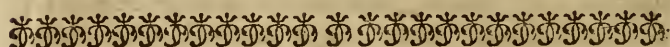
man who had thrown such a public scandal on their family.

“ I now thought my happiness compleat, and, giving a loose to love, despised the censure of the world, and looked no farther than the present moment. But a little time made a change in my sentiments, and I began to languish for the other pleasures which I had forfeited by the step I had taken.

“ I would not by this intimate any uncommon alteration in my lover's behaviour; but the joy of novelty was worn off, desire was satisfied, and reflection began to obtrude upon us. Our situation necessarily precluded us from society, at least any that could afford us satisfaction, and confined us to each other; and when the tumult of passion began to subside, as we dared not apply to reason for relief, time grew tedious, and we mutually sighed for variety, to give a relish even to pleasure. The effect this had upon our tempers heightened our unhappiness. Unable to look into ourselves for the real cause, each accused the other of inconstancy and want of love; and these reproaches, instead of removing the complaint, were beginning to aggravate a coolness that was unavoidable, into determined dislike and aversion: for, my dear, let us in the warmth of youthful imagination flatter ourselves with what notions we will of eternal constancy and unalterable love, sense will soon be sated and languish for variety, if reason does not lend its assistance to fill up the dull pause of passion. With us the consequence was obvious, as our connexion depended entirely upon ourselves. But before we had time to resolve absolutely  
on



on a separation, an event happened which removed the immediate cause of our disgust, and awoke all our former tenderness.



## CHAP. VII.

*Continued. An unusual effect of absence. The loss of reputation sometimes inconvenient. Reflections on a qualification which all pretend to, and few possess; with a curious account of a man of consequence.*

“**I** HAVE observed to you that my lover had no fortune; all his hopes even depending on his military profession. The manner in which he had come away with me cutting off these for ever in his own country, necessity obliged him to seek employment among strangers. This the tumult of my thoughts had made me overlook, at the time when it was in my power to have prevented the consequences of it. But think what a state I must have been in when the hour of his departure came! I look back to it with horror even now when use has made his absence familiar to me, and softened many of the inconveniences of it.

“Without the conversation of a friend, to beguile the tedious melancholy hours, and blunt the sting of grief; without the approbation of my own mind, to sweeten thought and make reflection a pleasure, I was left a stranger in a strange place; and, what was still worst of all, every morsel I eat imbittered by the dread-  
ful

ful consideration, that it was earned at the instant hazard of the life dearest to me in the world ; for the first thought of our parting removed all that weariness which had been the cause of our disgust, and the occasion of it doubly endeared us, by shewing how much we had given up, how much more we hazarded for each other.

“ Our parting exceeded the power of description. After the first transports of my grief were over, I sunk into a state of insensibility, and grew absolutely indifferent to myself and every thing about me, fixing my thoughts entirely on the days which were to bring me an account from him, and living only for their arrival.

“ At length lenient time began to administer its never-failing relief; and youth and health united their powers to dissipate a gloom so contrary to my natural disposition ; I gradually recovered my spirits, and felt again a relish for the pleasures of society. But these pleasures were very different from those which I had formerly delighted in. My mind had learned to think, and I had had time to view things in another light from that in which they had appeared before. My affections, it is true, were still the same, invariably fixed upon my friend, and all the wishes of my heart centered in him ; how justly though I did not dare to consider, holding every thing that concerned him too sacred to be even enquired into.

“ These wishes indeed were of a much more extensive and exalted kind, than those which had given rise to our connexion. You may have observed that I called him my *friend*. From this time, I looked upon him in that light ;

light; and if not entirely in that alone, the very uniting the idea of friendship with love was the highest improvement to the latter, and in a great measure purified it from every gross allay.

“ The effect this had upon my mind is scarce to be conceived. I was not incapable of thought; but I had never given myself time to think. The moment therefore that I began, I found a pleasure in it which cannot be conceived; every hour brought me knowledge that made me both surprised at, and ashamed of my former blindness and ignorance; I read in my own mind, though unhappily too late, all the wisdom necessary for the conduct of life. I thus literally became a new creature; and on my emergence from the solitude in which I had buried myself since my friend’s departure, sought the company (and flatter myself that I was not unworthy of it) of the most valuable part of my sex.

“ But I soon had the mortification to find myself precluded from this pleasing hope. Retired and unexceptionably as we had lived, the circumstances of our elopement had somehow been discovered; so that when I appeared in company, instead of meeting the reception I had fondly expected, my advances toward intimacy were repulsed by my own sex, and I found myself exposed to the familiarity and libertine addresses of the other, who always lay it down as a rule, that a woman who has broken thro’ the laws of virtue with one man, has entirely thrown off all farther regard to them, and is a fair quarry for general pursuit.

“ You may easily judge what a shock this was to me. I now began to feel the inestimable loss of reputation, and returned to my former

former retirement with an heart bursting with disappointment, shame, and remorse. But I was not suffered long to enjoy the peace I sought even there. My new admirers pursued me, and in spite of all I could say persisted in their gallantry; and that often in a manner too gross to have been offered to any but a professed prostitute.

“ Had this happened some time sooner; I should have instantly written to my friend, to come to my *relief* from such insolent abuse; but my thoughts had now taken a new turn, and I dreaded nothing more than its coming to his knowledge, for fear of any ill consequences to himself from the warmth of his temper, which I knew would be provoked to the highest rage at such an attempt. For this reason I resolved to take no notice of it to him, but behave in such a manner to my admirers as should make them ridiculous even in their own eyes.

“ Habits long confirmed are not easily broken through by the best resolutions. I had a natural levity of temper; and the critical nature of my intercourse with my friend before our elopement, laid me under a kind of necessity of practising coquetry in my general conduct, in hopes of covering my particular connection with him. I will therefore take shame to myself, and confess that in my present solitary condition, the prospect of amusement, in playing off their foolish addresses, had some weight with me in this design; never considering that such a conduct was inconsistent with the principles in which I now prided myself, and must inevitably disappoint my hopes of recovering the esteem



esteem of the prudent and virtuous of my own, and rational part of the other sex.

“ I see you are affected with this melancholy detail ; but my heart was so full, that I could not stop its overflowing. I shall now conclude with one of the many adventures which this new scheme of mine produced, the oddity of which will probably restore you to spirits.

“ The persons who thought proper to do me the honour of declaring themselves my admirers were of every age and rank in the place. As they had discovered the nobility of my birth, they all thought it incumbent upon them to display their utmost politeness in the manner of making their addresses. Though every country has peculiar customs which constitute the rule of behaviour, true politeness is essentially the same every-where, and differs only in the external modes of expressing it. The mechanical part, as I may justly call it, which consists in cringes and compliments, may be easily learned ; but the unembarrassed ease and proper freedom of address and deportment, which denominate the character at first sight, and that desire to give pleasure, which pleases in its very appearance, must have a foundation from nature, in a benevolent and generous disposition, and be confirmed by early education and long practice. The latter indeed may give an habit that shall deceive a superficial view ; but where the former is wanting, the judicious observer will soon discover and despise the imposture.

“ I had abundant experience of the justice of this remark in the behaviour of my new admirers. Had I had nothing more than meer common amusement in my thoughts, this would have



have afforded me sufficient ; but resentment at their impudence made me determined to push their folly to its utmost length, and then expose it to public ridicule.

“ The few who really possessed that politeness which all aped, soon perceived, by the manner of my receiving their advances, that they were disagreeable to me, and accordingly desisted from giving me any farther trouble. But their awkward imitators in the externals of good-breeding, forming their judgment of me from themselves, construed my complaisance into approbation, and thought I was pleased with what they said, because I did not directly fly into an outrage ; but when I had taken time to look into their characters, and see which was fittest for my purpose to work upon, I gave the rest their dismissal, in the manner most like to take effect.

“ Among the selected few whom I permitted to flatter themselves with hopes of success was an old burgher, who had made an immense fortune by every iniquitous practice in the mysterious business of a *contractor*, for supplying the armies of the powers at war with provisions. Though he was sprung from the very dregs of mankind, and had passed his youth in the most sordid and servile employments, his heart was so puffed up by his riches, that he must on all occasions assume the man of birth and good breeding. This his own base disposition made it impossible for him to do in any thing beside their follies and vices, in all of which he made a most remarkable figure. He built fine houses, he bought pictures, he gamed ; and, to compleat his character, he must now have a mistress of  
quality ;

*quality*; and I, forsooth, was the happy object he had pitched upon for this honour.

“ I should have observed, that as soon as he took it into his head to commence a man of figure, he had married a wife, whose whole fortune consisted in the nobility of her family, being descended in the ninth remove from a German baron, and none of her illustrious ancestors having stained their blood by any kind of industry.

“ Before he could obtain such an honour, he was obliged to hire an herald to deduce his pedigree, by the easy means of changing only four letters in his name, from an equally illustrious house; and to turn an only daughter by a former wife, whose industry had been greatly assistant to his making his fortune, out of doors, without any provision more than a bare support from absolute want.

“ The disposition that could demand such terms was far from being softened, when its tyranny was confirmed by marriage. She governed in the most despotic manner. He was obliged to quit business. His fortune was lavished upon her relations, who let him know they thought him honoured by their acceptance of it; and he was but a cypher in his own house, where every servant quoted her command for disputing his authority, and told him directly that he was not qualified to give directions in so genteel a family.

“ In such a situation it was not strange that he should seek for satisfaction abroad; but even in this his design was consistent with the rest of his conduct, and very different from what might most naturally be imagined. Insignificant as  
he

he was at home, he gave himself the highest airs of politeness and consequence among his companions, where he was safe from the terror of his tyrant's power, to confirm his title, to which character, as I have said before, he formed the project of paying his addresses to me, not from any particular passion he had for me.

\*\*\*\*\*

### C H A P. VIII.

*Continued. A short way of making love. Bargains best made in few words; with an odd instance of old-fashioned folly.*

“**I**T is impossible to give any description of this important person's courtship. His politeness, it is true, reached so high as to accost me with as many bows and cringes as make the awkward ceremonial of some crowned heads, and with an equally good grace. But here it all ended; and when he came to speak to me, it was in the same phrase and manner as he would have bargained for a parcel of cheese, or meal.

“Madam, (said he) understanding as how  
 “your ladyship's favours are to be disposed of,  
 “I come to treat about the purchase. I like  
 “the appearance of your commodities, and do  
 “not doubt but they are in good order, and  
 “merchantable; and shall therefore give you  
 “your own price. I am not one of your  
 “higgling chaps that make many words to a  
 “bargain. Ready money is my way; and the  
 “rest I leave to yourself.”

“ Though I had studied my part very well, I was somewhat disconcerted at such an address. Recovering myself however in a few minutes, I was rather diverted than offended at the oddity of it, and resolved to drive the *bargain*, as he justly called it, in his own way. Accordingly I answered him with an affected confusion, that I did not rightly understand what he meant.

“ Madam, (replied he) my meaning is to—  
 “ to—to——. In short madam, plain dealing  
 “ is best. My meaning is, to purchase some  
 “ certain favours from you, for which I am  
 “ willing to pay you the highest price of the  
 “ market. I despise making fine speeches; but  
 “ if you are inclined to deal, no one shall out-  
 “ bid me. I never think good wares too dear.  
 “ Come! Don’t stand shilly shally! Say! Is  
 “ it a bargain, aye, or no?”

“ It was impossible for me to pretend ignorance any longer; though I did not think proper to accept of his proposals too readily, for fear it should make him think slightly of my *ware*; at the same time that I saw it was necessary to keep up his hopes, by seeming to enter into treaty with him, as he was insensible of that expectation and anxiety which to minds of more delicacy are the food of love.

“ You men of consequence (I answered)  
 “ have a peculiar way of doing every thing.  
 “ Your fortunes raise you above the formalities  
 “ necessary to be observed by other people. I  
 “ own I do not disapprove of your proposal;  
 “ but as it is a thing which I have never yet  
 “ thought about, I must take some time to  
 “ consider what terms are proper for me to  
 “ make.



“ make. In the mean while I shall be glad to  
 “ see you as often as it is convenient for you to  
 “ do me that honour.”

“ Odsso, madam, (returned he, overjoyed at  
 “ his success) you are a sensible woman, and  
 “ speak like one that has been used to business.  
 “ I like you the better for your frankness. It is  
 “ my own way. And when you have fixed  
 “ your price, we shall not differ. There shall  
 “ be no delay on my part. Ready money!  
 “ Ready money is always my word.”— “ Say-  
 ing this, my lover took his leave, and left me  
 not a little at a loss how to manage with  
 him.

“ As I was no stranger to the circumstances  
 of his family, the first thought that occurred  
 to me was, to reveal the whole to his wife, and  
 concert measures with her for punishing his infi-  
 delity and presumption. But, upon reflection,  
 I enlarged my scheme, and resolved to try if I  
 could not turn his ridiculous passion to some ad-  
 vantage for his deserted daughter, before I gave  
 him up to her chastisement.

“ Accordingly I went directly to a lady with  
 whom I knew she was acquainted, and enquir-  
 ing, as if from common curiosity, into her cir-  
 cumstances and character, had the pleasure to  
 find her every way worthy of my regard and as-  
 sistance. I therefore sent for her very privately  
 that evening, as if to give her some needle-  
 work to do for me, her father's allowance be-  
 ing so small that she was obliged to have re-  
 course to industry, to enable her to live with  
 any degree of comfort, though shame made her  
 do it with as much privacy as possible; and  
 giving my conversation that turn which I

thought most likely to win her confidence, pressed her to let me know her designs and prospects for life, for making which enquiry I assured her I had other motives than meer curiosity.

“Moved by the manner in which I spoke, she burst into a flood of tears; and, as soon as she was able to speak, told me modestly, that she had no prospects, and was incapable of forming any designs; that indeed the height of her wishes would be to be married to a young man who had been bred to business under her father, but was turned off as well as herself on the new-ordering of his family; that they had loved each other from their infancy; but he having no fortune to enter into trade with, his family, which was very reputable, having been ruined by the calamities of war; and her father abandoning her in the manner he did, they could not think of transmitting their misfortunes to their innocent posterity by marrying; and therefore had vowed to each other to live single, as the only proof they could give of the sincerity of their mutual attachment.

“I was not proof to such a story. I embraced her tenderly; and assuring her of my friendship, bade her hope for an happy change in her fortune very speedily. I then enquired how much would be sufficient to settle her husband in business with a prospect of success, and encourage them to marry? and on her answering, that if they had about a thousand crowns to add to some little matter they had already made a shift to lay up by their frugality, they would venture, and trust the event to the blessing of providence on their honest industry. I told her;  
that

that if I was not disappointed much beyond my expectation, she should not long want a greater sum than that; but that all depended on her not taking the least notice of her having been with me, or even mentioning my name to any one living, till I should give her permission. This caution she promised to observe most carefully, and then took her leave with a lighter heart than she had felt for some time.

“ My design upon my *ready-money* lover was now urged by a better motive than either amusement or revenge, which had first set me upon it. The money, which I doubted not to extort from his absurd passion, I resolved to give to his daughter; and then to make use of the assistance of his wife, to avoid performing my part of the bargain, and compleat my original scheme, who, I was sensible, would not only punish him sufficiently for his vicious folly, but also expose him to the highest and most public ridicule.



## C H A P. IX.

*Continued. Many buyers raise the market. On ballancing avarice and vanity, the former kicks the beam.*

“ ACCORDINGLY, when he came to pay me a visit next morning, I gave him an opportunity of renewing his treaty, which he pressed so warmly to be brought to a conclusion, that, after a little affected hesitation, I con-

descended to capitulate; and at length assented to his proposal for the consideration of two thousand crowns.

“ At the mention of such a sum he looked aghast. “ Two thousand crowns! (said he, as soon as he could shut his mouth to articulate a word) Why, sure your ladyship can’t be serious! I never heard of such a thing in my life. Two thousand crowns for a night’s lodging! I have lodged a whole army for less before now. You surely can’t be serious, in making such a demand! A prince is not able to purchase your favours at such a price.”

“ Then no prince shall have them, Sir, (answered I, putting on a look of offended dignity) and if you think my demand too high, you are welcome to go where you may be served cheaper. I know where I can have more from another person; but as you spoke first, I would not treat with any one else till I had concluded with you.”

—— “ More than two thousand crowns! Death, madam, it is impossible. Who is able to offer more than two thousand crowns?”

—— “ Really Sir, I do not think myself obliged to answer such a question. However, to let you see that I am above imposing on you, What do you think of the *count*?”

“ At that word his pride instantly took fire. He had been born a vassal of the count’s family, to efface the remembrance of which he now took every opportunity of entering into competition, and insulting him with the ostentatious display of his superior wealth. This I knew, and therefore made use of his name, though without any authority, as the surest method of working



working him up to my design, being confident he would scorn to be outdone in any thing, much more a matter so essential to his character, by one whom he both hated and despised so highly.

“The event shewed I had judged right.”

“The count, madam! (said he, with an air of contempt) Why! What of him? Is not my money as good as his?”

—— “Yes, Sir, I believe it may; but you do not seem so well inclined to part with it. I thought, after what you said last night, that we should not have a second word; but I find people can talk of their ready money, without opening their purses.”

“Madam! I’d have you to know, madam, that I scorn such an imputation. It is well known that I never go back from my word, madam. When I say it, I will do it. But really, don’t you think you ask too much? Is there no prevailing on you to abate?”

—— “Sir, you said yesterday, that you did not like to make many words; no more do I, Sir. On the strength of your offering ready money I set the very lowest terms; and I wonder how you can think them much to a woman of my quality. In my country, I have known an orange-girl get more. But perhaps you would chuse such low-lived creatures; though I own I took you for a person of better spirit, and above descending to any thing unworthy of your rank; and I am sorry to find that I am mistaken. It is true I had some hints of the kind given me, and therefore did not give the count a positive denial; so that I can easily come to treat with

“ him again. He knows what is due to a lady  
 “ of distinction, and will not make words about  
 “ such a trifle. So, Sir, your humble ser-  
 “ vant.”

“ While I was making this notable and deli-  
 cate speech, which I could scarce suppress my  
 laughter to utter, he stood in the most whimsi-  
 cal situation, as if ballancing the account be-  
 tween avarice and vanity. At length the latter  
 prevailing, “ Hold, madam, (said he, catching  
 “ me by the sleeve, for fear I should leave him)  
 “ pray don’t be in such a violent hurry. I know  
 “ how to behave to you as well as the count,  
 “ and better too; and I’ll see him damn’d be-  
 “ fore he shall touch the hem of your gar-  
 “ ment. I’ll make him know that he shall not  
 “ pretend to outbid me, for any thing I have a  
 “ mind to ! That I will ! And so, madam, you  
 “ shall have your price, without any draw-  
 “ back ; and in earnest of the bargain, take this  
 “ purse of an hundred ducats. Only name the  
 “ time and place ; that’s all. That’s all ; I won’t  
 “ stand for a receipt.”

—— “ Then, Sir, if you will please to come  
 “ secretly, at ten to-morrow night, to my gar-  
 “ den-door, I’ll meet you there myself, and  
 “ conduct you up.”

—— “ Very well ; I’ll be sure to come. I am  
 “ always punctual to a minute, in those affairs ;  
 “ but must I bring the rest of the money with  
 “ me, or will you make me your banker, and  
 “ draw it out as you want it ?

—— “ I should, Sir, with all my heart ; but  
 “ it happens that I have occasion for it to-mor-  
 “ row-morning, and therefore must beg the fa-  
 “ vour of you to bring it to me by nine o’clock.”

—— “ How

—— “How, madam! Nine o’clock in the morning! I thought you said ten at night.”

—— “Yes, Sir, so I did, to perform my part of the bargain. I only mean that you should bring the money so early, as I have a pressing call for it in the fore-noon. I presume you have no objection to obliging me so far; and don’t doubt my honour to keep my promise.”

—— “N——N——No, madam! I—I—I can’t say as how I do doubt your ladyship’s honour in the least, for the matter of that. But still, I—I—I—. Will not the evening do as well? I should be glad to oblige you, to be sure; but advancing money before we have even had a sample of the goods, is quite out of the way of business. It is what I never do.”

—— “Then, Sir, here is your purse again; and I am sorry to have thrown away so much time. I must and will have the money to-morrow morning. I know the count will make no difficulty. Persons of quality have confidence in each other.”

—— “Madam, I have as much confidence as he, or any man; and as for *quality*, with the addition of my wife’s arms, I have nine quarterings more than he. His rank indeed! And so madam, I am ready to oblige your ladyship with all my heart, if it was ten times more. I only said it was out of the course of business. I did not refuse you. No! No! I know better what is due to a person of rank, than to refuse such a trifle. We always have a regard for one another.”

—— “Then Sir, I may depend upon you, at nine in the morning, without fail.”

——“You may most assuredly, madam; and  
“so take the earnest again.”

“All things being thus settled, I permitted him the honour of a salute, as earnest of the bargain on my side, and sent him away quite happy.

“I suppose his impatience for the arrival of the next morning was not quite so high as mine, violent as his passion was. However, he was punctual to his time; and being immediately admitted to my dressing-room, as soon as the servants withdrew, “Here, madam, (said he, “with an emotion that shewed the struggle in “his breast at what he was doing) here is the “money. You may tell it over. I have only “deducted the hundred ducats I gave you in “earnest, and the usual discount for advancing “money before-hand; only five per cent, no “more; and we never do it for less. Business “will not afford it.”

“Well, Sir, (answered I, fully satisfied that I “was secure of so much) I do not understand “those matters; but I leave it entirely to you. “And to convince you that I am a person of “honour, I will be as punctual to my appoint- “ment as you have been to your’s. At ten “precisely, you shall find me at the garden- “door. But, for fear of being observed, don’t “you think it would be better if you were to “disguise yourself some-way. A lady’s repu- “tation, you know, is a very tender thing; “neither would it be so proper, that a person “of your dignity should be discovered. It would “lessen your importance in the eyes of the “public.”

——“Why, madam, to be sure, what your  
“lady-



“ ladyship says is very right ; and therefore,  
 “ though I shall scarce know myself when I lay  
 “ by my robes, I will strive to do without them  
 “ for once, and come disguised in the dress of  
 “ any private gentleman. I have heard that  
 “ the greatest pleasure of an intrigue is in the  
 “ stratagems and tricks that are practised to hide  
 “ it. Hah ! hah ! hah ! And so I wish your  
 “ ladyship a good morning. Atten ! Remem-  
 “ ber at ten.”

“ My scheme having succeeded thus far, I was impatient to communicate their good fortune to those who were to reap the benefit of it. I therefore wrote to his daughter, to come to me that night about eleven o’clock, and bring her lover with her. The great difficulty now was how to open the affair to the wife, in such a manner, that she should be ready to be produced at a proper time, without danger of her letting her wrath break out too soon, so as to prevent the accomplishment of my design.

“ The only way I could think of was, to go to the lady from whom I had the story of the family, and who, I had reason to believe, would gladly give her assistance to promote any scheme for punishing her husband, and exposing him to ridicule. At the first mention of the affair, she entered most heartily into it ; and, to make sure of the lady, went directly and engaged her to spend the evening with her ; not chusing to let her know a word of the matter till every thing should be ripe for execution, for fear of the violence of her temper.



## C H A P. X.

*Continued. Listeners seldom like what they hear.  
The danger of provoking high blood; with the  
great merit of peace-making in the modern way.*

“ALL things being thus prepared, the expected hour at length arrived when I attended to admit my gallant, who did not make me wait long. On my opening the garden-door, I was surprised to see the manner in which he had disguised himself. He had put on an old suit of cloaths all over dawb’d with lace, which had belonged half a century before to a relation of his wife’s, whom the tradition of her family recorded to have been a general officer; and which she preserved with the most religious care, as an indisputable proof of her illustrious descent, supplying new lace or cloth occasionally, to repair the depredations of time.

“The absurdity of putting on for privacy a dress whose glaringness and singularity must attract the notice of every one who saw it, and would probably draw the mob after his heels, could not have escaped any one but himself; but his head was too intent upon making a figure in the eyes of his mistress, to mind anything else; as I was far from being displeased at it, my motive for desiring him to disguise himself being only to expose him to stronger ridicule on detection, which I did not design he should escape.

“As soon he entered the garden, his first care was to make me observe the brilliancy of his appearance, by telling me that according to my desire he had come in disguise, but could not possibly debase himself, or dishonour me so much as to put on any dress unworthy of his rank, or improper to appear in before me. I thanked him for my share of his compliment; and being apprehensive that he might be for taking some liberties which I did not like, if I made any delay there, led him directly up to my own chamber, where I left him in the dark, telling him I would return as soon as I saw my servants properly disposed of.

“I then went down into the parlour, where my confederate had just brought his wife, big with expectation of hearing something from me that nearly concerned her honour. Few words were requisite to introduce a subject which all were equally impatient for. I directly unfolded to her the injustice designed to her bed; (the affair of the money I thought proper not to mention for obvious reasons) and telling her, that having in vain tried every argument to get rid of his importunity, and convince him of the flagrancy of such a crime against a lady of her rank, I had at length pretended to comply with his desires, on purpose to give him up to her admonitions and authority, which I hoped might be more effectual to reclaim him; and therefore made an appointment with him, as if to gratify his vile desires, in consequence of which he was that very moment in my chamber, whither she was at liberty to go to him.

“It is impossible to describe the effect this story had on her. She stood for some moments:

convulsed with rage. At length recovering herself a little, she was for going directly and trampling the wretch under her feet; but her friend interposed, and insinuating, as we had concerted, that though what I said might possibly be very true, it would yet be a satisfaction to the lady to be a witness to it herself; wherefore she thought it would be the best way, if I pleased, for me to return to him, and enter into some such dissuasive discourse as I had before used, his answers to which would confirm what I had said, and be a testimony against him, that he could not attempt to deny or evade. To this I replied with an offended air, that I was not accustomed to have what I said doubted; however, on such an occasion as this I should wave all punctilio, to give satisfaction to one for whom I had so high a respect as her ladyship; and therefore was ready to do that, or any thing else she should desire.

“Flattered by this compliment, she nodded majestically, and suppressing her wrath as well as she could, let me know that she would attend me to the disgraceful scene.

“My gallant was by this time beginning to be impatient. On my opening the door (which I left open for his wife, though I shot the lock to impose upon him) he advanced to me, and taking me by the hand asked why I had not brought a light? “Deeds of darkness (said I, “with a loud sigh) should avoid the light. I “do not believe I shall ever bear to see the “light again after consenting to give you this “meeting. But I hope you will reflect on the “blackness of such a crime as this you have “been so long soliciting me to, and desist before it is too late.”

—“Hey-



—— “Hey-day! What can be the meaning  
 “ of all this? What fool’s-play can you be at  
 “ now? Come! Come! For shame, stand to  
 “ your word. I cannot stay long with you to-  
 “ night. I must be at home before my *Jeza-*  
 “ *bel* of a wife, to pull off these cloaths. If  
 “ she should see them upon me, I should never  
 “ hear the last of it. I cannot stay above an  
 “ hour; and so make haste.”

—— “I am amazed, Sir, that you can speak  
 “ of a lady of your wife’s rank in so disrespect-  
 “ ful a manner! It gives me a very bad opinion  
 “ of you. She merits better treatment; and  
 “ after the honour she has done you in conde-  
 “ scending to be your wife, it is the highest in-  
 “ justice and ingratitude in you to wrong her  
 “ bed with any body else.”

—— “Blood, madam, you are enough to  
 “ make a man mad, to stand trifling so at such  
 “ a time as this! As to what you say about  
 “ my wife’s bed, it is all nonsense. No man  
 “ can bear to bed with such an ugly, filthy  
 “ brute; and for the honour she did me, I am  
 “ sure I have paid dearly for it. I have raised  
 “ her great family from beggary. They had  
 “ not a rag to cover their illustrious nakedness,  
 “ till I took compassion”——

“At these words, in burst his wife like a  
 tygress robbed of her whelps. “Villain! slave!  
 “base mechanic! (exclaimed she) You take  
 “compassion on my family! You raise them  
 “from beggary! But I’ll not stoop to talk to  
 “you. I’ll have satisfaction! I will! The  
 “blood of your base heart shall wash away the  
 “affront. I’ll summon all my relations to-  
 “morrow-morning, and lay your villainy be-  
 “fore

“fore them. They’ll vindicate the honour of  
 “our house; they’ll do justice to themselves  
 “and me, in a manner that shall strike terror  
 “into all such ungrateful wretches.”

“While she poured out these threats, she was searching for him all round the room; but he fortunately escaped her by creeping under the bed, the moment he heard her voice, where he lay in a situation that may easily be conceived. Not being able to find him, she roared out for lights; but I thought it would be too severe to give him up, till her anger should be somewhat cooled, and therefore countermanded them; and as she had by this time raved herself out of breath, I took her by the hand, and leading her to a chair, “Pray, madam, (said I, in a  
 “soothing accent) sit down for a moment and  
 “strive to compose yourself. I own, the pro-  
 “vocation you have received is very great, to  
 “have your bed slighted, and your person spoke  
 “so injuriously of.”—

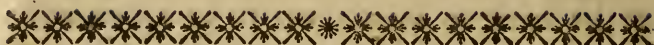
“Mention not that! (answered she) mention not that! I despise him too much to regard any thing he can say of myself. But my family! The villain, to traduce my family, and talk of their being under obligation to him! They who suffered him to come into their pedigree, and quarter their arms! I will have revenge. I will have his heart’s blood.”

“The resentment you shew, madam, (interposed the other lady) is worthy of you, and proves the nobility of your blood. No person of family can bear such abuse. But still, madam, consider who it is that has offered it. A creature that is not worthy of  
 “the

“ the resentment of your relations, and has not  
 “ the spirit to meet them to be killed fairly,  
 “ and as a man of honour should kill him; and  
 “ you would not have them turn assassins and  
 “ murder him, and so let all his fortune go to  
 “ his daughter, as you could not inherit it after  
 “ such an action. For all these reasons I would  
 “ recommend it to you to make up this ugly  
 “ affair. What has passed is known only to  
 “ ourselves, and need go no farther. Where-  
 “ fore, if he will ask your pardon for what he  
 “ intended to do, and actually said to this la-  
 “ dy, and will make over half his fortune to  
 “ you, to settle upon your own family, in case  
 “ you should have no children yourself, I think  
 “ your ladyship had better forgive him.”

“ The other heard her out with great pa-  
 tience; and then pausing for some time, as if to  
 weigh matters, “ Well, madam, (said she, sigh-  
 “ ing) since you advise it, I submit. For this  
 “ offence I will accept of the satisfaction you  
 “ propose; but let him take care how he repeats  
 “ it.”

“ Matters being thus happily adjusted, I cal-  
 led for lights, and desired my gallant to make  
 his appearance, who having overheard all that  
 passed, ventured to creep out of his hole, tho’  
 without daring to speak a word..



## C H A P. XI.

*Concluded. A relapse is often worse than the first disorder. By the help of good friends, the grey mare proves the better horse. The whole concluded with some interesting reflections, which prove that people should look before they leap.*

“THE candles discovered a groupe of figures not easy to be described. My unfortunate gallant, all pale and trembling, his bushy wig turned awry, and the powder of it spread over his cloaths, which were all tumbled and dropping wet from something he had spilled in his creeping under the bed, fixed his haggard eyes upon his tender mate, who no sooner perceived the splendid relicks of her kinsman’s rank abused in such a manner, than forgetting her pacific resolution, she relapsed into all her former fury.

“Audacious villain (exclaimed she, her eyes glaring with rage, and her whole face distorted with every diabolical passion) “to profane that “sacred testimony of the honour of my family “on such a wicked, base occasion! Were you “not afraid that the offended spirit of it’s illustrious owner would come and tear it from “your vicious carcase? But he has left the task “to me.”

“Saying this, she flew at the trembling wretch with an impetuosity not to be prevented, and, driving her fangs into his cheeks, in an instant bathed his face in blood. Cowards when  
aroused



aroused are always most desperate. Though nothing could have made him face her fury deliberately, the moment he felt her claws in his flesh he forgot his fears, and giving an hideous roar, returned her assault with equal violence, fastening one hand in her hair, and striking her on the face and breast with all his might with the other.

“ The combat now was really terrible, and the victory for some time doubtful. But at length with our assistance, who, when we thought she had suffered enough, under the appearance of parting them, overpowered him, the amazon got the better, and kneeling on his breast as he lay on the ground, vented her rage upon him while she was able to strike a blow. When she could beat him no more, we made a shift to separate and raise them from the ground, and having with some difficulty restored them both to their senses, resumed our mediation, in which we were so successful, both parties being sufficiently sick of the quarrel, that a reconciliation was agreed to, which we took care should be on the most mortifying terms to the old lecher.

“ During all these transactions, my poor gallant used frequently to look at me so significantly, that I was afraid his wife would have observed it, and extorted an explanation. But it escaped her notice, and he thought proper not to mention any thing of the matter; whether that he judged such an instance of extravagance would only provoke her more; for, lavish as she was of his money upon her relations, she grudged him every penny he spent; or concluded from my conduct, that I should  
deny

deny the charge, which in that case would only aggravate his shame, as he had no proof of it.

“To confirm him in this opinion, which I guessed to be the cause of his silence when his lady and he were first ready to depart, I mustered up all the assurance I could; and addressing myself to her; “I hope, madam (said I) “that if this odd affair should ever happen to “be known, you will bear witness to the purity and virtue of my conduct: And you, Sir, “I must caution against taking any liberties “with my character, with a view of extenuating your own crime, or laying any thing to “my charge which you cannot plainly prove, “as you regard your life; which, you are sensible, would be made answerable for any insult offered to me.”

“To this speech she replied in the affirmative, while her husband returned only one of his expressive looks, and then they lovingly departed together.

“When my confederate and I had indulged our mirth for some time, we went to my gallant’s daughter, who, with her lover, was just then come. On my entering the room where they were, the strongest anxiety appeared in both their faces, though modesty prevented their giving it utterance. Not to keep them in pain, “You told me yesterday, madam, (said I, taking her by the hand) that a thousand crowns “would give you a prospect of happiness, with “this deserving gentleman. I now have the “pleasure to inform you, that I have applied “to your father, with whom I have pleaded “so successfully, that I have got you two “thousand from him, which I have ready to “give

“ give you, and hope heaven will bless it in your hands.”

“ What this happy pair felt on this occasion, may be easier conceived than described. They fell together on their knees before I could possibly prevent them, and kissing my hands, bathed them with tears of extasy. My heart melted in sympathy with them. I raised them from the ground, and embracing them both, led them, unable to speak, into the next room, where I put the money into the lady’s hands, who directly gave it to him. We then sat down to supper, during which, to relieve their spirits that were sinking under the pressure of joy and gratitude, I gave a loose to the pleasure my heart was overflowing with, and entertained them in the most obliging and familiar manner; and when the servants retired gratified their curiosity, which I saw raised to a torture, with an account of the whole affair, but in the light most favourable to my old gallant, to avoid giving his daughter pain, who, notwithstanding his unnatural treatment of her, never mentioned him but in terms of duty and respect.

“ Though the burgher and his lady had promised, as really they ought for their own sakes, to keep this curious affair secret, it soon took wind. The lady, whose natural sweetness of temper was not much encreased by this affair, never saw the livid marks of her husband’s prowess upon her face, or thought of the profanation of her kinsman’s cloaths, that she did not read him a comfortable lecture on his baseness and debauchery before all companies; by which means all she knew of the matter became public. But this was not all. My gal-  
lant

lant had boasted among his intimates of his supplanting the count in my favour; and when he was so far recovered from the effects of his wife's resentment as to be able to shew his face, scrupled not to say that he had carried his success to the height of his wishes, though he never took courage to renew his applications to me, nor even, which I wondered at, to demand restitution of his money.

“ This laid me under a necessity of telling the whole affair, in my own vindication, both his giving me the money and the use I had made of it, which gave the story another turn; those who were most unfavourable in their opinions of me before now changing their note, and extolling my justice and generosity to the skies. Nor was this the only advantage I received from it. The rest of my admirers, terrified by the burgher's fate, thought proper to draw off in time, and give up a pursuit that might be attended with danger; so that I was delivered from the persecution of their impertinence.

“ By this time the campaign was ended, and my friend returned to me, who enjoyed the whole story with the highest pleasure; but as my gallant might some-way have it in his power to make my abode in that place disagreeable, for he was more vexed at the use I had applied his money to, than at his own losing it, before he took the field next season, he removed me hither where I have lived ever since, if not in the credit I could wish, yet without any new reproach, and where I want nothing so much as the approbation of my own mind to make me happy.

“ You

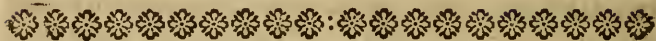


“ You may probably wonder why I do not seek this happiness, by breaking off my present connection with my friend, and returning to my family ! But, alas, the things which we ought to do are not always in our power. I see what is best, but I follow that which is worst. My heart is now so wedded to him, ( if I may use the expression ) that death only can part me from him ; and though the pleasure I enjoy in his company is never without alloy, even for the poor pittance of his time which it is in his power to spend with me, from the reflection of its being criminal both in the commencement and continuation of it, I have not resolution, I cannot even say I have a wish to be separated from him.

“ Beside, whom should I return to ? What happiness could I expect at home ? My family indeed have let me know that they would receive me ; but how ? Not to their esteem ! That is impossible. As a reprobate whom they have admitted out of charity, to give her an opportunity of repentance, and save her from ruin in another life as well as this ; as a reproach to them, which they would keep among themselves to hide it from the world. Every look would upbraid me, every word insult my folly. At least consciousness would take it in that sense, which were equally intolerable.

“ I have thus, my dear friend, given you a view of my unhappy life, both to entertain you and ease my own heart, by pouring out its griefs into your bosom. If you think me worthy of the like confidence, or that my advice can be of any advantage to you, I shall give it with as much sincerity as I shall receive yours with gratitude

itude upon all occasions; and I promise you the most inviolable secrecy."



## CHAP. XII.

*One story generally introduces another. The true object of female attention to dress. Common consequences of fashionable intimacy, and female friendship, with the secret of making a right use of a shoeing-horn.*

THE other lady, who had listened to her friend's story with the strongest attention, was some time before she made any answer. At length, with a down-cast look and heavy sigh, "I should make a bad return, dear madam, (said she) for the good opinion you have shewn of me, could I harbour any doubt of you, or refuse to comply with any thing you desire. My unhappy story has few circumstances; and O that the sequel of it may have fewer yet! Those in which it differs from your's are all to my disadvantage. The principles of virtue were inculcated in my opening mind with the tenderest care, and enforced to my imitation by the most lively example. I passed the most dangerous season of life, when ripening youth too often makes passion an over-match for reason, without reproach; and at last ran head-long into ruin, with my eyes open.

"You must wonder at a conduct so contrary to every motive that should influence a creature

endowed with the faintest glimmering of reason. But the cause of it may easily be traced. Public fame had flattered me into an opinion of my own beauty, and many examples justified my ambition of rising to the most exalted fortune on the merit of that alone. Yielding therefore to the impulse of vanity, I thought of nothing but improving that advantage; and, under the appearance of studying my own pleasure, laid snares, with the most anxious and mercenary assiduity, for every man whom I thought proper for my purpose: the wretched toil to which the greatest part of our sex devote the prime of life.

“ I proceeded for some time on this plan, when the gentleman with whom I am at present connected took it into his head to single me out for the object of his gallantry. Though his being a married man cut off all hopes of success in my favourite scheme, there was something so flattering to my vanity in being admired by a person of his rank, that I could not resist the pleasure of it, especially as I meant nothing criminal, and this kind of gallantry had the sanction of fashion.

“ As the general intercourse kept up among people of distinction had been improved into some degree of intimacy between this gentleman’s wife and me, the assiduity with which he paid attention to me upon all occasions for some time passed for the effect of familiarity and friendship. But whether she suspected the truth, and therefore thought proper to shew a coolness to me, or that consciousness of deserving it made me think so, I at length began to fancy that she slighted me; and being confirmed

firmed in that opinion, by finding myself omitted in a general invitation of her acquaintances, I conceived the most violent resentment against her; to wreak which in the severest manner I affected to listen to her husband's addresses with pleasure, and gave reason for suspicions which were foreign to my heart, though at the same time I was not insensible that by such a conduct I ran the hazard of defeating my original design; but this I vainly thought I could remedy when I pleased, by breaking off all connection with him as soon as I had gratified my pique against her.

“There is nothing more dangerous than listening to the allurements of vice, though with the most innocent intention. It is like playing on the brink of a precipice: By making the idea familiar, it takes off its terrors, and brings on a false security that generally betrays into a fall.

“I expected that my admirer's wife would soon perceive this change in my conduct, and by breaking with me entirely give me an opportunity of triumphing over her in the most mortifying manner, by shewing the most sovereign contempt for what made her so unhappy. But instead of this she continued to treat me with the same if not greater intimacy than ever, and convinced me that the offence I had taken had been all groundless.

“Whether she did this to retort my schemes, and make me look despicable even in my own eyes, or in hopes of shaming me into a proper sense of my behaviour by the contrast between it and hers, I cannot say; but this I know that it had the former effect most fully,



and would certainly have succeeded in the latter also, had it not been for one of those accidents which, as you justly observed, shew the insignificancy of human wisdom, and rule our lives.

“ A gentleman of distinguished rank and fortune, but who was far advanced in years, and in every respect an object of aversion and contempt, unhappily took a liking to me. The advantages of such a match dazzled the eyes of all my friends, who exerted their utmost influence to induce me to consent to it. But tho’ it was the very object I had all along had in view, and exceeded the most sanguine hope my vanity had ever formed, when it came to the test, my heart rebelled, and I could not bring myself to barter happiness for grandeur.

“ Though I gave this answer in the most determined manner, and supported it with reasons impossible to be refuted, my lover would not desist. On the contrary, he seemed determined to weary me out by his importunity, and, to second it, engaged the authority of my family, on the strength of which he always urged his odious suit with the most insulting confidence.

“ The contrast between this conduct, and the respectful insinuating address of my former admirer was too striking. I began to hearken to him with more pleasure than ever ; and, from a confirmed persuasion that I could not be happy with the other, rashly concluded that I must be so with him, as if the alternative was unavoidable.

“ As my ancient suitor had settled his bargain with my friends, he looked upon me as

secure, and therefore made no secret of the affair. The moment it came to my lover's ears, he expostulated with me upon it in the most passionate and tender terms; and though I had yet formed no resolutions which made it necessary for me to account for my conduct to him, I held the other in such aversion, that in the weakness of my heart I could not conceal it; nor my unhappiness and apprehensions from the authority and importunities of my friends.

“He was too well versed in the science of intrigue not to take immediate advantage of this. He condoled with me on the cruelty of such a persecution, enumerated the many instances in which it had been unhappily successful; and heightened my dislike of the other into abhorrence, by several anecdotes of his character which I was before a stranger to. Nor did he stop here. As he was intimate with his rival, he instantly exerted all his art to urge him to press his suit with me more earnestly, imputing my refusal to coyness which wanted only to be wooed, and turning his bashfulness, as he called it, into ridicule.

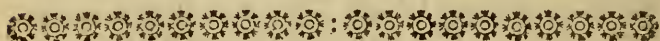
“While he stimulated him in this manner, he made me believe that he used every argument which generosity and honour could suggest, to dissuade him from a pursuit that he saw was so disagreeable, but all in vain; the other declaring, that, if I persisted much longer, he would have recourse to the authority of my friends, which they had promised to exert at a proper time, when resistance should be out of my power. This scheme was too successful. Urged on by him, my suitor pressed his addresses with redoubled warmth, and enforced them  
with

with new offers, which engaged my friends still more sanguinely in his behalf; and by that means confirmed all my lover had said to me, who aggravated my apprehensions of compulsion to such a height, fixing the very hour when I was to be sacrificed to a particular day on which I had been obliged to accept of an invitation to his country-seat, in company with some of my nearest relations, that in the madness of affright I listened to the proposals he made me, and consented to come away with him, persuaded that, however blameable such a step might be in other cases, self-preservation justified it in me; so that I really ran away from my suitor, rather than with my lover.

“ The mystery of this management I was not long unacquainted with. He was so proud of the address he had shewn in it, that the moment he had me in his power, he could not avoid boasting of it in the vanity of his heart. This was the first thing that awoke me to reflection, though I have since had abundant reasons beside. The mortification of finding myself duped in such a manner, by one whose understanding I had ever held in too low esteem, to have any apprehensions of the kind, with the ridiculously vexatious circumstances which attended my elopement, had such an effect upon me, that I wrote to my friends in the anguish of my soul, to beg I might be permitted to return, and throw myself absolutely upon their mercy in every respect but that of being sacrificed to that odious old creature; but a false pride prevented their complying with my request. They concluded, though most injuriously, that my ruin was compleated, and

rejected me with disdain, as a reproach to them.

“ I then had no choice left, and was obliged to persist from necessity in the crime of folly, as, I am persuaded, is the case of many of those who appear most culpable. What will be the consequence I dare not even divine. This I am determined on : I will not be the sport of his caprice, carried about like an unnecessary part of his baggage, only for shew, to gratify his vanity at the expence of my shame. He shall either quit his military life at the end of this campaign, and retire, according to his repeated promises and oaths, to some place where we shall not be known ; or I will quit him, and return home at every event. I am entitled to a fortune that will afford me a morsel of bread in some country-village, where I may have leisure enough to repent of my folly ; and even that is better than the life I lead now.”



### C H A P. XIII.

*More military matters. Politics on one side of the question,*

**J**UST as the lady had concluded her story, my fellow-traveller continued his journey. I therefore left the fair friends together, to compare the errors of their past conduct, and confirm each other in their resolutions of amendment.



The futtler, having taken the circuit he intended, arrived at the camp to which he was going without any accident, and delivered his packet into the general's own hand, who running his eye over the contents, " 'This will do! " (said he) This will do! I have long waited " for an opportunity to give them a decisive " stroke, and now I have got it; thanks to my " faithful and vigilant agents! Sure no other " people ever were so infatuated as to harbour " the subjects of their enemies thus in their very " bosom, in a time of open war! They do not " preconcert a motion that I have not notice " of. Indeed if it were not for the intelligence " which I receive in this manner, I should of- " ten be at a loss."

The purport of the intelligence which he had received was, that the adverse army would be so considerably weakened, as the next day, by several detachments, that a general attack might be made almost with a certainty of success. Such an opportunity was not to be missed. He instantly set about making all the necessary preparations, and sent orders to another general, who commanded a separate body of forces, but subordinate to him, to second his design, by a vigorous attack at the same time on the side next him. The dispositions he made wore the most promising aspect; but, according to the usual uncertainty of military operations, his whole scheme miscarried. He met with so warm a reception from the enemy, who had an opportunity of opposing their whole force to him, the other general not attacking at the same time, that he was forced to retreat with precipitation and considerable loss, and leave

the other, who was just then coming up, exposed to the victorious army, which might have given him a total defeat, had not that been contrary to the general's scheme of protracting the war; who therefore, content with repulsing one part of the enemy's forces, permitted the other to retreat without a stroke.

This disappointment inflamed the discord which already subsisted between the two generals; the chief alledging, that he should have succeeded in his attempt, had his orders been properly obeyed by the other, who retorted the accusation, and said he was abandoned on purpose that he might be cut off, which must have been the consequence had not the enemy mistaken a retreat, for which he saw no necessity; for a stratagem to draw him in between the two corps, each of which was almost equal to his whole army.

The consequence of this disagreement is obvious. Each general had his own creatures among the officers, who, openly espousing the cause of their patrons, began a kind of civil war among themselves, which threatened the most dangerous effects, had the enemy been intent upon taking the advantage of them.

On my proceeding to take a view of this army, I was sensibly struck at the difference between it and that which I had seen before. In the other, though a variety of interests prevented the various corps of which it was composed from holding that friendly intercourse with each other, that ought to subsist between men engaged in the same cause, yet still that jealousy went no farther than an unsociable distance, and never interfered with duty.

duty. The men beside were well provided with the necessary appointments of every kind, which preserved them in that health and vigor indispensably essential to success.

But here every thing wore a different aspect. Though all the subjects of the same sovereign, and therefore united in every view of interest, the officers, as I have observed, were divided into factions, and embroiled in constant quarrels; and the private men sickly, half-starved, and half-naked; yet, under all these distractions and distresses, the levity of temper which characterises their nation displayed itself in its greatest force; the officers forgetting their animosity the moment they had put up their swords, and chatting together on matters of mirth and amusement with all the familiarity of friends, till some accident revived their disputes; and the men dancing to divert hunger, and keep them warm, and all venting their resentment against the authors of their several grievances in a scurrilous song or lampoon.

While I was making these observations the night after this miscarriage, my attention was struck by a conversation which passed between two officers on guard, who, having drawn off to some distance from their men, thought themselves in no danger of being over-heard, and therefore opened their hearts without reserve.

“ I think, (said one of them, whose accent shewed him to be a foreigner) that considering all things, we got very well over this affair. Had the enemy pursued his advantage, I do not know what might have been the consequence.”

“ That is very true, (answered the other)

“ it might have been somewhat disagreeable;  
“ but this will always be the case where court-  
“ favour is put in competition with merit, and  
“ rivals joined in command whose emulation  
“ is to supplant each other, though at the ruin  
“ of the public cause; and this is the very  
“ thing that has drawn this war out to such a  
“ tedious length. The general who began it  
“ gloriously was immediately removed, to make  
“ way for one whose sole aim was to make a  
“ fortune by every iniquitous and inhuman me-  
“ thod of ruining the unhappy countries which  
“ were the seat of the war, and defrauding the  
“ very army he commanded of their necessary  
“ appointments. When his avarice was sa-  
“ tiated, and the public clamour grown too  
“ loud, he was succeeded by another favourite,  
“ though of an opposite party, who was ho-  
“ nester, it is true, but had less military know-  
“ ledge, which brought a disgrace upon the  
“ glory of his country, not paralleled in its  
“ annals.

“ To retrieve that, necessity pointed out the  
“ present general, on whose activity and va-  
“ lour great expectations were founded. Nor  
“ did he disappoint them. His entrance on  
“ the command was signalized by several suc-  
“ cessful and glorious exploits, which were to  
“ prepare the way for more important events;  
“ but before he had time to put his great de-  
“ signs in execution, the same prevailing in-  
“ fluence which had so unhappily removed the  
“ first general, and taken offence at the pre-  
“ sent also, found means to incumber him  
“ with his present colleague, and by that means  
“ stopped his progress, as you have seen this  
“ day;



“ day ; and where it yet may end, I tremble to  
 “ think.”

“ Faith, (replied the former) this is but an  
 “ uncomfortable account, I own ; but I never  
 “ trouble my head with looking forward. My  
 “ business is to fight when I am in the field,  
 “ and live as well as I can upon my pay when  
 “ I am not ; and I mind nothing else. Not but I  
 “ should like to know something of these matters  
 “ too ; but I can’t tell how it is, I have a bad head  
 “ for politics myself, and I never converse with  
 “ any one who is able and willing to instruct  
 “ me. If it be not too much trouble, I should  
 “ be obliged to you for some information. It  
 “ will serve to pass away the time, as we have  
 “ nothing to do. Pray what was the cause of  
 “ this war that has cost us so many fine ar-  
 “ mies ? And what are we sent here for ? For  
 “ my part, I cannot comprehend it for my life !  
 “ We are marched all this way, I know not  
 “ for what ; and lose our lives I know not  
 “ how, dying like rotten sheep without any  
 “ credit to ourselves, or advantage to our sove-  
 “ reign.”

“ You ask a question, my friend, (returned  
 “ the other) not easy to be answered, nor safe  
 “ to be discussed, were it possible for us to be  
 “ overheard ; but as I think there is no dan-  
 “ ger in that, I will strive to give you the best  
 “ account I can of the matter.

“ The English and we, you know, are ne-  
 “ cessarily enemies, because we obstruct each  
 “ other’s views. If it was not for those head-  
 “ strong Islanders, we should long since have  
 “ raised the glory of our sovereign to the highest  
 “ pitch, by the conquest of all Europe ; as, on

“ the other hand, they would engross the com-  
 “ merce of the whole world, and of course be-  
 “ come masters of all the wealth in it, did we  
 “ not cross their avaricious views by every pos-  
 “ sible means. In negotiating, we always have  
 “ the advantage of them; but when we come  
 “ to war, I do not know how it is, but they  
 “ sometimes are hard enough for us.

“ As for the present war in particular, it  
 “ took its rise solely from their presumption and  
 “ injustice. Under pretence of our having  
 “ forcibly possessed ourselves of some spots of  
 “ land which belonged to them in the bound-  
 “ less deserts of America, they fell upon our de-  
 “ fenceless merchants without any previous de-  
 “ claration of war, and took numbers of them  
 “ in a cowardly pyratrical manner.

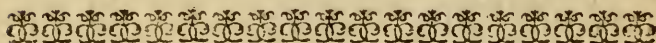
“ Provoked at this insolence, our monarch  
 “ in his wrath sent one of his armies, and con-  
 “ quered an important part of their dominions.  
 “ Astonished at this stroke, they stood looking  
 “ at each other in the most despicable affright,  
 “ while he proceeded gloriously in his con-  
 “ quests in every part of the globe.

“ Their terror was for some time so great,  
 “ that they called in a parcel of their mercena-  
 “ ry allies, to protect them from his vengeance,  
 “ which they apprehended would pursue them,  
 “ even in their own country; not giving them-  
 “ selves time to consider, that there was a sea  
 “ between them which it was impossible for his  
 “ troops to pass.

“ At length they were roused from this  
 “ state of fear and stupefaction into a kind of  
 “ phrenzy, in which, by some strange misma-  
 “ nagement in our affairs, they not only reco-  
 “ vered

“ vered almost all the conquests we had made  
 “ from them, but also pushed their success  
 “ to a length which a Frenchman can not  
 “ think of without blushing.

“ To ballance these advantages, and bring  
 “ them to a proper way of thinking, we are  
 “ sent here, where our alliances and the num-  
 “ ber of our forces encouraged us to hope,  
 “ that we might make such acquisitions as on  
 “ a treaty of peace should be deemed equiva-  
 “ lent to theirs, and exchanged for them. Hi-  
 “ therto matters have not succeeded quite so  
 “ well as we expected; but still we have gain-  
 “ ed one great point, in making them dissipate  
 “ that wealth, which is the foundation of their  
 “ power, in a fruitless opposition to us; a fol-  
 “ ly that will certainly reduce them to beggary,  
 “ if they persist in it much longer, which our  
 “ monarch knows, and for that reason conti-  
 “ nues to carry on the war, even under such  
 “ apparent disadvantages.



## CHAP. XIV.

*A new scheme of carrying on a war. An ill-timed  
 doubt often disconcerts a good story. Anecdotes of  
 a loyal family. The history of Sir ARCHIBALD,  
 and ZELIDE princess of Armenia.*

“ I AM very much obliged to you for this  
 “ information, (replied the foreigner) I  
 “ own I have never viewed things in this light  
 “ before. I have indeed felt some of the bad

“ consequences of our want of success in the  
“ stoppage of my pay ; but I never dreamed of  
“ the advantages which might attend the prosecution of an unsuccessful war.

“ But in the mean time, is there no danger  
“ that we may be out in our calculation, and  
“ ruined first ? By all appearances, the finances of the enemy are in a much more  
“ flourishing way than ours. They pay every  
“ body punctually, and even enlarge their  
“ expences every day, in pushing their good  
“ fortune, and supporting the conquests they  
“ make.”

“ And so much the worse for them, (re-  
“ torted the Frenchman) their punctual payments will soon leave them penniless. Our  
“ government acted more prudently. By refusing to pay their debts, they kept money in  
“ their hands to carry on their designs, which  
“ the others will soon find themselves unable  
“ to do.

“ As to their enlarging their expence in supporting their conquests, that is the very  
“ thing we desire. We let them conquer on-  
“ ly to draw them into more expence. You  
“ cannot think that our mighty monarch would  
“ have permitted their insolence to have gone  
“ unpunished so long, if he had not some great  
“ end in view. No ! No ! Their conquests  
“ will be their ruin, take my word for it. As  
“ soon as they have exhausted themselves by  
“ conquering, they will be glad to give all up  
“ for a peace. It has ever been so. It is but  
“ sending an able negotiator to treat with them,  
“ and the work is done ; their heads are too  
“ heavy for politics. No ! No ! their making conquests signifies nothing. “ As



“ As to what you say of our being ruined  
 “ first, that is all a mistake. Our king can  
 “ never be ruined while there is money, or mo-  
 “ ney’s worth, in his dominions. It is all his  
 “ own. He need not stoop to flatter his sub-  
 “ jects to lend; he has power to take. They,  
 “ it is true, may possibly suffer for a time? but  
 “ what does that signify where the glory of  
 “ their sovereign is concerned? No true  
 “ Frenchman ever thinks of that. He leaves  
 “ such selfish considerations to English mer-  
 “ chants and mechanics. He is above them.

“ I say, *for a time*; because our resources  
 “ are all within ourselves. Let us be never so  
 “ exhausted by war, a few years of peace never  
 “ fail to restore us; and we have the pleasure  
 “ to reflect, that the attention paid to our in-  
 “ terests then always makes amends for what  
 “ we suffered before; whereas our enemies  
 “ think of no such thing. The moment they  
 “ get a peace, which their eagerness for it sel-  
 “ dom lets them have patience to wait for on  
 “ good terms, they fall to wrangling among  
 “ themselves, and never trouble their heads  
 “ about the good of the public, till they have  
 “ occasion to call for assistance again; so that  
 “ their affairs are always better managed in  
 “ war than in peace, even in respect to the  
 “ matters most foreign to war.

“ The reason of this is, that their gover-  
 “ nors not having any direct property in the  
 “ goods of their subjects, they think it not  
 “ worth their while to take any care about  
 “ them; whereas with us, all being in our  
 “ sovereign’s power, he looks upon them as  
 “ his own, and studies their improvement ac-  
 “ cordingly.

“ cordingly. Of this there might innumera-  
“ ble instances be given in all the articles of  
“ commerce, the ballance of which we con-  
“ stantly continue to bring into our favour, in  
“ peace, by some means or other, in less time  
“ than they wrest it from us in war.”

“ All this may be very true, for ought I  
“ know, (said the foreigner) but one thing I  
“ am convinced of, which is, that however  
“ conducive this power may be to the monarch’s  
“ glory, it were better for his subjects that he  
“ should be without it. I have experienced  
“ both cases, and therefore am the better able  
“ to judge.”

“ If so, (answered the Frenchman with some  
“ tartness) I wonder why your countrymen  
“ chuse to come and fix themselves among us!  
“ Few people leave a place they like for one  
“ they do not.”

“ Very true, (replied the foreigner gravely)  
“ they seldom do. But there may be circum-  
“ stances to influence such a choice. I have  
“ heard this glanced at more than once; and  
“ in such a manner, that I had difficulty to  
“ refrain from taking notice of it. I am not  
“ captious in my temper; but still I cannot bear  
“ insinuations injurious to my country. For  
“ this reason, as I esteem you, and consequent-  
“ ly desire your good opinion, give me leave  
“ to relate a few of the particulars of my own  
“ case, which, I imagine, will make you view  
“ the matter in a different light, from what  
“ you seem to have done hitherto; and convince  
“ you of the injustice of such reflections for the  
“ future; nor shall I trespass on your patience  
“ long.

“ You

“ You are not a stranger to the revolutions  
 “ which have happened in the British govern-  
 “ ment. I will not enter into a discussion of  
 “ the power which the people of England have  
 “ on many occasions exercised over their sove-  
 “ reigns. That part of the British dominions  
 “ in which I was born has ever been remark-  
 “ able for the contrary principles; our un-  
 “ shaken loyalty having always been proof to  
 “ temptation, and even to tyranny.

“ In this antient monarchy my ancestors en-  
 “ joyed distinguished honours, before the fa-  
 “ milies of many of the present sovereigns of  
 “ Europe had emerged from barbarism and ob-  
 “ scurity. Our possessions were extensive; and  
 “ if nature had denied the enervating delicacies  
 “ of luxury, Heaven made ample amends by  
 “ the number and virtue of our vassals, whose  
 “ valour, guided by the loyalty of their lords,  
 “ often supported their sovereign’s throne in  
 “ the dire conflicts of ambition, the struggles  
 “ which the untamed sons of savage liberty  
 “ made against law and rule.

“ The virtuous actions of our ancestors are  
 “ handed down for imitation; nor is the sacred  
 “ record discontinued, till a series of unworthy  
 “ deeds makes the degenerate posterity blush  
 “ at the upbraiding comparison. Doubt not  
 “ therefore the tale which I am going to re-  
 “ late; nor think it to be the fiction of vanity  
 “ or imagination. The reverend sire has still  
 “ delivered it invariably to his attentive sons,  
 “ nor has a syllable been altered in the course  
 “ of so many generations.

“ Our fame was not unknown in foreign  
 lands. Wherever the shrill trumpet called the  
 war-

warriors forth to arms, our banners waved the foremost in the field; and trophies, won by feats of hardiest prowess, graced our social halls.

“ We had proceeded in this honourable path for many ages, when holy Lewis, glowing with pious zeal, undertook to deliver the sacred repositories of the blessed saints, the places hallowed by the footsteps of our Lord, from the profanation of infidels. Fired at the news of such a glorious design, the heir of our illustrious house led forth the chosen youths of all our hills, to fight the battles of the faith. The name of their chief prepared a welcome for them, and justified the choice which Lewis made of youthful Archibald, to lead the van in all his armies, after he had dub'd him his own knight.

“ The unhappy event of this great design is too well known. I shall therefore confine myself to what immediately concerns this my most honoured progenitor. During the struggles which Lewis made with the malevolence of fortune, the actions of sir Archibald made him the terror of the hosts of the infidels; at the same time that his<sup>1</sup> exemplary virtues were a reproach to the looser manners of his fellow-soldiers. In an excursion which he made one day, in quest of intelligence, fate directed his steps to the banks of a rivulet in the neighbourhood of the Saracen camp, the beauty of which tempted him to trace its course along the woody vale.

“ He had not proceeded far, when the sound of female voices struck his ear. The songs with which they filled the winding valley, declared the innocence and happiness of their hearts. He lis-



tened for a while ; and then, as he was a truly chaste and courteous knight, was turning about to retire, for fear of intruding on their privacy, when a shriek of affright told him his assistance was necessary to them. He hesitated not a moment ; but, rushing forward, saw that a troop of the marauders who swarmed around the camp of Lewis, and dishonoured the christian name with their atrocious crimes, had surprised a band of helpless females, and having dispersed their feeble guard of eunuchs, were carrying them forcibly away. He knew their danger in the hands of such worse than brutal ruffians ; and proclaiming his own name in a voice that shook the hills, ran forward to their rescue.

“ Awed at the well-known name, they seemed to pause ; but their leader seeing that sir Archibald was alone and on foot, for when he first heard the voices he had left his horse with his men, that he might not disturb them as he advanced to listen more distinctly, waved his hand to his associates to follow, and clapping spurs to his horse’s sides was out of sight in a moment. But all did not escape so easily ; the well-aimed javelin of sir Archibald pierced the hindmost as he had turned himself for flight, and brought him life-less to the ground. The active knight instantly seized the steed of the fallen caitif, and vaulting nimbly on him rode after the ravishers, whom he soon over-took, the struggles of the females impeding their flight, and their cries directing his pursuit. The villains at first taking him for their companion avoided him not, nor stood on their defence ; but the deaths of the two first of their number, who fell within the reach of his sword,

sword, convinced them of their error, and that it was impossible for them to fly from him.

“ Custom had inured them to danger, and despair now made them valiant. Their number also against his single arm gave them a prospect of success. They let go the women therefore, and forming themselves into a troop bore all together upon him. But he disdained to wait for their assault; and rushing furiously into the midst of them, for some time maintained the unequal combat, and ballanced their numbers by his valour. Five of their bodies now lay breathless round him, when his horse, pierced to the heart with a spear, fell to the ground so suddenly, that all his agility and strength were not sufficient to disengage him from him. In this situation he expected nothing less than instant death, when all at once the assailants turned their backs, and sought their safety in flight.

“ Surprised at this, sir Archibald looked round, and saw his faithful men galloping up toward him. They had heard his voice when he first called to the ruffians, and imagining that he wanted their assistance advanced with speed by the side of the rivulet, till they found the wretch whom he had pierced with his javelin; alarmed at the sight of whom they doubled their haste, and happily came up time enough to save their lord.

“ The first care of sir Archibald was to search for the women, whom it was difficult to find, their fright having made them hide themselves the moment they had been let go by the ruffians. At length, however, the diligence of his men discovered them all but one,  
the

the loss of whom the rest deplored in the most passionate terms. Sir Archibald concluding that she must have been carried off by some of the ravishers, while the rest stopped to attack him, was at a loss what to do. It was in vain to think of overtaking them without some guide to direct his pursuit, and whom to get he knew not.

“ In this perplexity he bethought himself of trying whether some intelligence might not be gained among those who had fallen by his sword, if they all were not as yet quite dead. He was not disappointed. From one of them he learned their place of rendezvous; and that their leader had borne away his prey, as sir Archibald had conjectured. The generous knight was alarmed at her danger, and, ordering two of his men to conduct the disconsolate damsel back to the Saracen camp, set off himself with the rest in search of her.

“ The place to which he was directed was a cave in the darkest recess of a wood, at a considerable distance from him. The day was now far spent, and the way so difficult to be found, that it was night before they reached the cavern. Sir Archibald waited not to demand entrance, but drawing his sword rushed boldly in. Heaven seemed to have delayed him to the moment that should make his coming most critical. Inflamed with brutal passion, the miscreant, when he could not persuade the damsel to compliance, had resolved to gratify his base desires by force. Her cries reached the ear of sir Archibald as he entered the cave, and directed him to her rescue; which he effected just as her strength was exhausted in the struggle, and she

she lay a defenceless prey to the spoiler. With one stroke he severed the wretch's head from his body; when, raising the astonished maiden from the ground, he strove to restore her spirits by the most tender and encouraging assurances of safety and protection.

"At first she threw her eyes wildly round the dreary cave, and, filled with the horror of the scenes she had just gone through, could scarcely believe her senses that she was delivered. At length recovering power to speak, "What  
"man, or rather what angel art thou" (said she in the Saracen tongue, fixing her eyes upon him as he stood without his helmet, which he had pulled off when he had first raised her from the ground) "whom Heaven has thus miracu-  
"lously sent to save me from ruin? The be-  
"nefit is so great, that I had rather think the  
"latter, as the obligation is too much to owe  
"to man."

"Lady, (answered he in the same language, which he had learned in the war) I am a  
"man! a sinful man, who knows it is his du-  
"ty to succour virtue in distress."

"A man! (replied she earnestly) Say then  
"of what lineage and country art thou come,  
"that I may study the most acceptable reward  
"for thy courtesy and valour!"

"Thou seest before thee, (returned he) lady,  
"a Christian knight, whose faith makes virtue  
"a duty, and looks not for reward."

"A Christian! Gracious Heaven! (exclaim-  
"ed the lady, as recovering herself after a long  
"pause) Pardon courteous stranger the ravings  
"of a distracted brain! No reward can return  
"the obligation I am under to you, and yet I  
"must



“ must sue for more ; I must intreat you to  
 “ conduct me directly to the Saracen camp,  
 “ and restore me to my distressed parent, who  
 “ now laments the loss of his only child.”

“ Talk not of rewards, most beauteous lady,  
 “ (said the knight, gazing in rapture on her)  
 “ the pleasure of doing you a service is it’s own  
 “ reward. All I require is to know your name ;  
 “ and O ! tell me, I conjure you, (continued  
 “ he, falling on his knees before her) if it be  
 “ possible for a soldier of no ignoble birth or  
 “ fame, to make the offer of his honest heart  
 “ acceptable to you.”

“ Brave knight, (answered she) an heart  
 “ like thine is worthy of the most exalted maid’s  
 “ acceptance ; but there are insuperable obsta-  
 “ cles to thy desire. As for my name, it would  
 “ avail you naught to know it. Let me adjure  
 “ you therefore by that virtue which your soul  
 “ reveres, to desist from any farther enquiries  
 “ about me ; and conveying me to the camp  
 “ of your enemies, there to leave me to my  
 “ fate.”

“ Thy will, O beauteous arbitress of my  
 “ destiny, (replied he) is a law to thy devoted  
 “ servant. I obey thee ; but first permit me  
 “ to pour out the fulness of my soul.”— Then  
 taking her fair hand as he kneeled before her,  
 and holding it between his, “ Accept my ho-  
 “ mage, sovereign lady of my heart ! (said he)  
 “ and receive me from this hour for thy true  
 “ and constant knight ; and by this sacred  
 “ pledge I swear, (touching her hand devout-  
 “ ly with his lips) no other dame shall ever  
 “ raise a wish in my breast contrary to the faith  
 “ I here plight unto thee.”——

“ And

“ And in return I promise thee, most valiant  
“ and right gentle knight, (said she) that the  
“ remembrance of thy courtesy shall never be  
“ erased from my grateful heart; nor any other  
“ man supplant thee in that regard which it is  
“ lawful for a virgin to feel for her deliverer.”

“ Comforted by this kind promise, sir Archibald took her by the hand, and, leading her to the mouth of the cavern, mounted her behind him on his able steed, and bore her without accident to the Saracen camp.

“ As soon as they came to the most advanced guard she dismounted, and pulling a costly jewel from her breast, “ Wear this (said she tenderly) in remembrance of one who will never forget her generous deliverer.”

“ I accept, dearest lady, (answered he bending his knee to the earth) a gift made precious by thy hand, and promise to wear it as a badge of thy authority over my heart; as thou, if I have found favour in thy sight, wilt also condescend to take this ring from thy servant. My honoured mother bestowed it with her dying benediction, and enjoined me never to give it till I could truly give my heart along with it.”—She kindly took the pledge of his love, and put it on her hand directly; then, bidding him adieu, advanced alone to the guard, who instantly conducted her where she commanded them.

“ Sir Archibald stood for some time, unable to stir; his eyes followed her as far as he could see through the shades of night, and he listened to her steps till the sounds insensibly died away from his ear. Awaking at length as from a trance, “ Unhappy Archibald (said he, striking his  
“ hand

“ hand upon his grief-swollen breast) to what  
 “ misfortunes has thy wayward fate reserved  
 “ thee? Never till this day did my heart feel  
 “ the power of beauty. I laughed at love, and  
 “ called his bondage folly; but amply has the  
 “ tyrant now avenged his cause, and pierced  
 “ me with his sharpest, most invenomed lance.  
 “ Ye maids of Caledonia, who oft have wept  
 “ your slighted charms, and called the heart of  
 “ Archibald insensible, now triumph in his  
 “ fall. He loves without a ray of hope to pro-  
 “ mise him success.”

“ Thus did he consume the remaining part of  
 the night in fruitless lamentation, till his fol-  
 lowers at the approach of morning reminded  
 him, that it was necessary for him to return to  
 the christian camp.

“ From this hour his heart was a stranger to  
 happiness. Did he know even who the object  
 of his wishes was, he might at least have pleased  
 himself with forming imaginary schemes for ob-  
 taining her love; but her command, which he  
 most religiously observed, precluded him from  
 making any enquiries about her, as his men’s ig-  
 norance of the Saracen language had also pre-  
 vented their learning any thing from the dam-  
 sels whom they had conducted to the camp.

\*\*\*\*\*

## CHAP. XV.

*The History of SIR ARCHIBALD, and ZELIDE  
princess of Armenia, continued.*

“**B**UT though his private peace was thus poisoned, it slackened not his attention to the duties of war. On the contrary, the troubles of his mind making him weary of life, he eagerly sought every occasion of losing it with honour. In the last unfortunate action between Lewis and the Saracens, Sir Archibald, at the head of his bonny lads, charged the infidels with such impetuosity, that he broke into the main body of their army; and had he been followed with equal spirit by the other squadrons under his command, might possibly have altered the fate of that unhappy day. But envy, which always follows superior merit, had inflamed the hearts of certain French lords, who thought themselves eclipsed by his fame, to such a degree against him, that when they saw him break like a torrent into the battle of the enemy, instead of following his steps with emulative virtue, they basely drew back, and gave the infidels an opportunity of surrounding him, and his few brave men.

“ Thrice did he penetrate so far through their numbers, as to seize the imperial standard; but the multitude, whom dread of such a disgrace made throw themselves desperately between him and it, as often bore him back. At  
length



length, collecting all his force for one last effort, he burst in irresistibly among them, and seizing it with one hand had raised the other to smite the chief, whose vigorous gripe withheld it from him, when a stone, hurled by a dastard slave who dared not approach within the reach of his sword, felled him to the ground. The base herd instantly rushed in, and were ready to wreak their cowardly revenge upon his defenceless body, when the chief, who respected valour, though in an enemy, and judged by the richness of his armour that he must be some person of note, whose ransom would well reward his humanity, interposed; and, discovering that he still breathed, ordered him to be removed to his own tent, and there taken proper care of. With sir Archibald fell the spirit of the christian army, and left the infidels an easy and compleat victory.

“ He had not been long in the tent of the chief, when, by the assistance of those into whose care he had been given, he began to recover his senses. Opening his eyes he looked around in silent astonishment for some time; then turning to the attendants who were busied about him, he asked them courteously where he was, and to whom indebted for such friendly treatment; but they laid their hands upon their mouths, to let him know that they must not converse with him. This increased his perplexity. The tent, and the habit of those who administered such kind assistance to him, shewed him that he was in the hands of the enemy; but that very assistance, so contrary to their usual practice, heightened his astonishment still more and more.

“ The next morning he found himself so well recovered, that he desired permission to wait upon his benefactor to return him thanks, and learn what ransom he demanded, which he doubted not but Lewis would readily pay. The chief received him courteously; and informing him of the total defeat of the christian army, gave him to understand that his hopes of liberty were at an end.

“ The effect which this account had on him was easily perceived. The manly fortitude that sat upon his brow before gave place to listless dejection. “ Thy will be done, O God ! ” (exclaimed he with a loud sigh) then fixed his eyes upon the ground.

“ The chief, who imagined that his grief arose from the thought of his captivity, encouraged him with assurances that he should not receive unworthy treatment. But sir Archibald soon shewed him that his distress arose from a more exalted motive. “ Think not, “ most courteous and noble lord ” (said he, raising his eyes slowly from the ground and fixing them on the chief, with a look that shewed a soul overburthened but not broken by woe) “ think “ not that my grief is for myself. Liberty is “ the jewel of every virtuous soul ; without it “ the sentiments of honour, generosity, and courage, are a torture. But still I mourn from “ a more extensive cause. I mourn the mis- “ fortunes of my royal master, the princely and “ pious Lewis. I mourn the defeat of the armies of the Lord. I am but a worm, an “ atom in the creation, unworthy of a thought “ in such a scene of ruin.”

“ The chief was struck with such greatness  
of

of soul, and, repeating his kind consolation, demanded who sir Archibald was, and what rank he held in the army of Lewis. But the high-minded knight had formed the resolution of concealing his name and quality, to hide the disgrace which he thought his captivity would reflect upon his noble house and country. “No! (said he to himself) never shall it be said that sir Archibald is a slave! that a noble *Scot* was forced to bend the knee to barbarous infidels. Let me perish unknown, and let my reproach die with me.”—Then, as if recollecting himself, “I am no more than a private knight, O noble lord, (answered he) whom a desire of fame brought to this fatal war. I was not born in the ligiance of royal Lewis, nor bore any high rank in his armies. I led a few brave youths, the followers of my way-ward fortune, to the field, who all, as I suppose, have fallen with honour; and O! that I had shared their glorious fate; but I was unworthy, and am reserved for slavery.”

“There is a sympathy between noble souls, which soon unites them. The chief, who before admired the valour, now loved the virtue of his captive. He directly received him into his intimacy, and was so struck with the charms of his conversation, that he opened to him all the secrets of his soul. As they sat together one day, beguiling the heat of the noon-tide hours, in pleasing discourse, the chief paused for some time as if lost in thought; then starting in a kind of transport, “It shall be so; (said he) ‘tis Heaven inspires the thought.”—Then addressing himself to sir Archibald, “*Selim*,  
F 2 “(that

“ (that was the name he had given him) thou  
“ must go and plead the cause of thy friend.  
“ That eloquence which can charm the fiercest  
“ passions of the soul to peace, can surely kindle  
“ the more gentle ones of pity and desire. I  
“ love, most warmly love; but the object of  
“ my wishes is insensible to my pain, nor will  
“ listen to my intreaties. Go then and soften  
“ her heart, paint my passion in proper co-  
“ lours, and teach her to make a just return  
“ to it. Attempt not to dissuade me from the  
“ thought. It is Heaven that inspires; and I  
“ will pursue it.”

“ Sir Archibald, who knew by sad experience  
that love is an over-match for reason, answered,  
that, far from contradicting his will, he was  
ready to obey him in any thing he should com-  
mand; and only desired to know how his weak  
endeavours were to be applied. The chief em-  
bracing him tenderly, “I will inform you of  
“ every thing, (said he) and will not doubt of  
“ your success. You must know that, about  
“ three moons since, the guard of one of the  
“ advanced posts brought to my tent a damsel  
“ most richly attired, who they said had come  
“ to them just before the morning-watch, and  
“ required to be conducted to the commander  
“ of the night. The moment she entered and  
“ cast her eyes upon me, “Achmet, (said she,  
“ with an air of dignity that awed my soul)  
“ lead me to the pavilion of thy master. I am  
“ Zelide, his daughter, who was this day sur-  
“ prized by the enemy, as I walked along the  
“ banks of the rivulet; and have now recover-  
“ ed my liberty in a manner not necessary to  
“ be told.



“ I was so dazzled at the sight of her beauty,  
 “ for she had no veil on, that I was some time  
 “ before I had power to make her any answer.  
 “ At length, prostrating myself at her feet,  
 “ Forgive, O beauteous princess, (said I) the  
 “ ignorance of thy slaves, who have not paid  
 “ the respect due to thy sublime state.”——  
 “ Rise, (answered she) and lead me to my fa-  
 “ ther ; I forgive every thing.”——

“ Encouraged by this condescension, I ven-  
 “ tured to rise, and taking her hand, which she  
 “ graciously held to me, conducted her to the  
 “ pavilion of the Armenian monarch. The joy  
 “ that her return raised can no more be descri-  
 “ bed than the situation of my heart. All was  
 “ tumult, extacy, and madness.

“ As soon as I had delivered her into her fa-  
 “ ther’s hands, I prepared to retire, when cal-  
 “ ling to me, “ Stay Achmet, (said the inrap-  
 “ tured monarch) and receive the reward of thy  
 “ service. I have sworn to give Zelide to the  
 “ man who should rescue her out of the hands  
 “ of the ravishers, and restore her to me. Her  
 “ maidens have told me what noble spirit you  
 “ exerted for her. Here Zelide, take an hus-  
 “ band who has deserved you.”

“ I prostrated myself at his feet in transport,  
 “ and embraced his knees, unable to express  
 “ the joy of my full heart ; when the princess  
 “ replied to her father, “ The merits of Ach-  
 “ met are sufficiently great, without assuming  
 “ those of another. I owe my liberty to an  
 “ unknown hand.”

“ It is impossible to express what I felt at  
 “ hearing her say this. The manner in which  
 “ she spoke convinced me that her heart was

“not inclined in my favour; and I knew the fondness of her father too well, to think that he would put any constraint upon her inclinations. However, I yielded to the impulse of my passion, and throwing myself at her feet, “Revoke not, O beauteous princess, (said I) the gracious words of my lord; nor reject an heart that is devoted to thee.”—

“Desist, Achmet, (said the monarch sternly) my hasty vow is saved; and the hand of Zelide to be obtained only on the terms proposed before.”—Awed at these words, I retired in dejection equal to the height of my late short-lived hopes; and from that day has my heart been a prey to despair.

“The assistance which I now require from you is this: In pious gratitude to Heaven, for her escape from bondage, Zelide has obtained permission from her father to relieve the captives of the war. For this purpose they are ordered to repair to a certain place before her pavilion, where she sees them through the silken curtains of her tent, and frequently converses with such as have any thing particular in their appearance to excite her curiosity. Thither you shall go; and I promise myself that you will plead my cause with success, if it so happens that she enters into conversation with you.”

“Had the chief attended to the effect which his story had upon sir Archibald, he would not have been so ready to send him as his advocate. Every circumstance convinced him that the princess was the object of his own love, whom he had despaired of discovering, and filled him with emotions which he could not suppress.

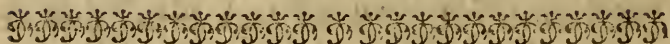
Re-

Recovering himself, however, time enough to escape the observation of Achmet, whose mind was too intent upon his own story to give much heed to any thing else. “It is my duty,” (said he) to obey thy commands; and different though I am of the abilities which your partiality bestows upon me, I am yet ready to undertake any thing which you think can conduce to your happiness.”

“Achmet again embraced him, and informing him at what time and where he should wait upon Zelide next morning, left him, while he went himself to attend his sovereign, in the course of his duty.

“No sooner was sir Archibald alone than he began to reflect on the commission which he had undertaken, and the distressing situation he was in. In the first emotions of his high spirit he blamed himself for not having avowed his passion, and asserted his prior claim; but a consideration of his unhappy state immediately checked this rash thought, and the desire of meeting the dear object of his love at any rate determined him to go, and trust the event to fate. “What shall I do? (said he) Shall I plead for the love of Achmet and destroy my own hopes? Or shall I betray his confidence, and speak only for myself?” Then pausing a while, “I will do neither; (he continued) if nature forbids the former, honour equally opposes the latter. Never shall it be said that sir Archibald broke faith with man. I will represent his love with fidelity; I will declare my own with honest truth, and leave the decision to herself.”——Pleased with this determination, his heart grew lighter; and the

thought of meeting Zelide filled him with joy, to which he had been long a stranger.



## C H A P. XVI.

*Continuation of the history of Sir ARCHIBALD  
and ZELIDE, princess of Armenia.*

“**H**AVING received his last instructions from Achmet, sir Archibald went at the appointed hour next morning to the royal pavilion. Though he was habited in the humble weeds of a slave, there was something in his appearance that spoke his noble birth, and prejudiced every heart in his favour. His stature was above the common size of men, his limbs turned in the exactest symmetry of strength and beauty. His auborn locks flowed in ringlets to the middle of his back, and his dark-blue eyes sparkled with sensibility and manly spirit; while a gloom of melancholy, suited to his present station, softened their fire, and threw a pallid veil over the ruddy bloom which youth had painted on his cheeks.

“He had not stood long, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and his heart throbbing with the most anxious emotions, when an eunuch came to distribute the relief which the princess sent to the captives, ordering such of them as she had pointed out to him to advance to the side of her tent, that she might enquire into the nature of their particular distresses.

“The



“ The state of sir Archibald’s heart, when the eunuch passed him by unnoticed, may be easily conceived. All his high hopes sunk at once. “ She knows me not ! (said he to himself) or she scorns to know me ! Mistaken “ Achmet ! to think that I could have any influence upon her.”

“ He continued these melancholy reflections while the princess was examining some of the other captives, and was departing with them, when the eunuch beckoned to him to advance to the tent. His emotions now were stronger than he could bear. He scarce had power to obey the summons. As soon as he approached the curtain, “ Christian, (said a voice from behind it) how long hast thou been a captive, “ and to whom?”

“ Most gracious princess, (answered he trembling and in agitation, that almost deprived him of utterance) for so I am instructed to “ address you, I lost my liberty in the late battle that proved so fatal to the unhappy Lewis; “ and my poor services belong to the illustrious “ Achmet.”

“ To Achmet ! (replied she) Great honour “ must he have acquired by the conquest ; and “ should treat such a captive as thou appearest “ to be with uncommon courtesy !”

“ The honour of Achmet (returned he) wants “ not so mean an addition. Thy slave was the “ captive of an host. As for my treatment, it “ is that of a man. An heart that is softened “ with love, like Achmet’s, cannot want the “ gentlest virtues of humanity.”

“ Thou speakest of that passion (said the “ princess) with a voice of sympathy. I sup-

“pose thy own heart is not free from it, and  
 “that the loss of thy liberty is imbittered by  
 “that of a wife, or mistress in thy native land.”

“Thy slave is not married, most gracious  
 “princess, (answered he) nor had my heart  
 “felt the power of love before I saw these fatal  
 “plains.”

“Then it should seem (continued she) that  
 “some of our beauties have subdued you to him.  
 “How long have you born his yoke, and who  
 “has bent your stubborn neck to it?

“The captivity of my heart, O sovereign lady,  
 “(answered he) is scarce three moons old;  
 “but the particular severity of it has made that  
 “time an age. To cut off every hope, the very  
 “name of the person whose chains I wear is  
 “hidden from me in impenetrable darkness.”

“That’s hard, indeed; (said she) but true  
 “fortitude is above despair. Perhaps you may  
 “find her yet. Come just at the close of eve-  
 “ning to this place, and you will meet a per-  
 “son who will inform you of strange things;  
 “but mention not a word of this to Achmet.  
 “Adieu! Be discreet, be resolute, and be hap-  
 “py.”

“The surprize with which this conversation  
 struck sir Archibald was so great, that he more  
 than once questioned himself whether it must  
 not be only an illusive dream. Satisfied, how-  
 ever, at length, that it was real, he retired to  
 his own quarter, among the attendants of Ach-  
 met, till his emotions should subside, and he  
 could recollect himself sufficiently to appear be-  
 fore him without danger of discovering what  
 had happened. He threw himself in a corner  
 of the tent, and covering himself with a carpet

that he might not be disturbed, lay motionless and lost in thought. He had not lain long when two of the domestic slaves of Achmet, natives of Greece, came into the tent, and not perceiving that any person was present, entered into a conversation upon murdering their lord, and flying into their own country with the booty which they should be able to plunder in the confusion caused by his death. After considering upon several methods, they at length agreed to poison him in a bowl of sherbet, which one of them, who was his cup-bearer, undertook to give him that very evening, while the other should pack up all his gold and rich jewels which were in his care, ready for them to carry off. Having thus concerted the scheme, they immediately went to prepare for the execution of it.

“ The first mention of this horrid design awoke all the attention of sir Archibald. He listened to their discourse, without giving them any alarm; and as soon as they departed gave thanks to Heaven for directing him to that place so opportunely, to save the life of his preserver, and so return the obligation he owed him; arising, therefore, he went to the tent of Achmet, who entered just at the same time.

“ The moment the chief cast his eyes upon sir Archibald he called him to him, and waving his hand to his attendants to withdraw, “ Se-  
 “ lim, (said he, his eyes glistening with rap-  
 “ ture) congratulate your happy lord. My  
 “ gracious sovereign has this day blessed my  
 “ hopes with a promise of the hand of Zelide;  
 “ and, as if Heaven meant to endear you still  
 “ farther to me, has made the rescuing of the  
 “ royal

“royal standard from your hand the glorious  
 “cause of giving me the preference to all my  
 “competitors. Have you been with the prin-  
 “cess? Have you mentioned my love to her?  
 “The only delay to my happiness now is, to  
 “obtain her consent. O bless me therefore by  
 “saying that she listens to my love.”

“I have mentioned it to her, (answered sir  
 “Archibald, who had need for all his presence  
 “of mind on such a trying occasion) in the  
 “most affecting manner; but it is too soon to  
 “expect the satisfaction you desire. Much  
 “time and many words are requisite to warm  
 “a virgin’s heart.”

“For this you shall have ample opportunity,  
 “(replied Achmet) to-morrow I will send you  
 “with a present to her; and every morning it  
 “shall be your pleasing task to carry her the  
 “tribute of my love.”

“The confidence, with which Achmet said  
 this was a pain to the honest heart of sir Archi-  
 bald, as he knew he must necessarily disappoint  
 it. To change therefore to a topic more plea-  
 sing to him, “You saved my life, (said he) and  
 “now Heaven shews its approbation of that  
 “generous action, by making me the means of  
 “saving yours.”—— “He then informed him  
 of the conspiracy he had just discovered in so  
 providential a manner, and gave him advice  
 how to detect it in the very moment of execu-  
 tion, to make the punishment of the wretches  
 more signal.

“The soul of Achmet was struck with ter-  
 ror at this account. The near hopes of happi-  
 ness which possessed him at this time armed  
 every thing that might defeat them with double  
 terrors.



terrors. He embraced sir Archibald in a transport, and resigned himself entirely to his direction, his own mind being in too great agitation to attend to any thing.

“As the time for executing their flagitious design was just arrived, Achmet went to take his evening’s repast, and seating himself on the carpet, without any appearance of suspicion, called for some cooling beverage, to slack his thirst. The cup-bearer, who had every thing prepared, presented him the bowl, when sir Archibald, who watched his looks, and plainly perceived the anxiety of guilt in his face, made a signal agreed upon to Achmet, and then went into the inner tent, where he found the other loading himself with the gold and jewels of his lord. Dragging him forth therefore, with this indisputable evidence of his guilt upon him, as soon as he came into the presence of Achmet, he seized the cup-bearer also, who stood panting with impatience to see his lord drink the fatal mixture, which he yet held untasted in his hand.

“The accomplices no sooner saw each other apprehended in this manner, than they sunk into the despondency of conscious guilt, and waited, pale and trembling, for the fate which hung over them. “Miscreants, (said Achmet, “rising from his seat in a rage) what could prompt you to this wickedness? Speak! Declare this moment at whose instigation you “made the base attempt; or torture shall “wring the secret from your bursting hearts.”

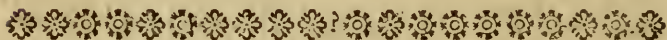
“The wretches were unable to make any reply, when sir Archibald interfering, “Mighty Lord, (said he) the nature of their crime

“shews

“ shews it was all their own; and points out  
 “ the punishment proper for them. Let them  
 “ drink the poison they had prepared for you,  
 “ and perish by their own device. Base as they  
 “ are, remember they are men; nor tempt them  
 “ to aggravate the guilt with which their mi-  
 “ serable souls are loaded by accusing the in-  
 “ nocent.”

“ Be it so, (answered the chief) their fate  
 “ is in your hands.”

“ Sir Archibald upon this took the bowl, and  
 dividing the horrid contents, gave it to the  
 trembling wretches, whose lives, torn from them  
 by the most dreadful torments, soon paid the  
 price of their guilt. Achmet then, embracing  
 his deliverer once more, retired to try if he  
 could calm the agitations of his soul by rest.”



## C H A P. XVII.

*The history of Sir ARCHIBALD and ZELIDE,  
 princess of Armenia, concluded.*

“ **T**HE time when the princess had order-  
 ed the attendance of sir Archibald was  
 now arrived; he therefore hastened to the ap-  
 pointed place, where he had not waited long  
 when an eunuch coming up and beckoning to  
 him said, “ Be discreet, be resolute, and be  
 “ happy.”

“ Sir Archibald, who well remembered these  
 words, followed him, without hesitation or re-  
 ply, into the royal pavilion, where he was led  
 through

through several sumptuous tents, one within another, till his guide, stopping and making a signal to him to wait there, left him. He waited not long, when a female covered with a veil entered, and seating herself on a sofa, “Christian, (said she, in a low voice, and beckoning to him to come near her) “the damsel whom you rescued from the ravisher in the cave, desires “you should know that she retains a grateful “sense of your courtesy and virtue.”

“Gentle lady, (said he, in a voice of rapture) “accept the warmest thanks of your servant for “this benign condescension; and O! compleat “the favour, by telling her, that her devoted “slave lives only in the hope of seeing her “again, and pouring out the fullness of his “heart before her.”

“Her heart (answered she) perhaps is not less “full than yours; but before she can comply “with what you desire, it is proper she should “know who you are, and what your rank was “in your native land.”

“My rank, (replied he, with a sigh) most “courteous lady, was noble, scarcely inferior “to royalty; the honour of my ancient house “unstained.”

“Say then; (returned she) if she whom you “profess to love should stoop from royalty it- “self to listen to your suit, what you would do “to merit such a favour? Would you forego “your country, renounce the worship of your “ancestors, and happy in the recompence of her “love, and of the state to which she would raise “you, swear you never would think of either?”

“Sir Archibald was struck with such horror at this proposal, that it was some time before he

he was able to make any reply. At length, as if awaking from a dream, "Support me; Heaven! (exclaimed he with a sigh that seemed to burst his heart) Support me! and proportion the trials of your creature to his strength!"——

"Then turning to the female, "There is nothing, lady, (said he) within the power of man to do, or suffer, which I should not attempt with joy for such an inestimable recompence; nothing which did not clash with honour or virtue. But what you propose would overturn both; and should I be tempted to comply, I were unworthy of a reward so basely earned."

"Is this your answer? (replied she with an accent of indignation) Can you pretend to feel the power of love, and yet to slight its object for the idle fictions of superstitious priests? Can you mention honour, and prefer subjection to royalty? Think better; nor blast your ripening hopes with such a mean ungrateful choice. Search your heart well, your fate depends upon the word you speak; for, never more will you be asked the question."

"Burst then, O wretched heart! (sighed he) and put a period to your torture. To live without my love is impossible; and Heaven itself forbids the terms on which alone I can obtain her. Tell her, kind lady, that, dearly as my heart adores her beauties, a principle higher even than love, and stronger than ambition, places an insuperable bar between us. But O, say at the same time, that the word which thus gives up my hopes, gives up  
"my



“ my hated life also. I must not have her, and  
 “ I cannot live without her.”

“ Virtuous Christian, (said she, lifting up  
 “ her veil, and discovering her beauties to his  
 “ ravished sight) thou provest thyself worthy of  
 “ the best blessings of Heaven by this thy no-  
 “ ble attachment to its laws. Behold the object  
 “ of thy love, who glories in an equal flame: yet  
 “ had thy heart wavered in the cause of virtue,  
 “ I should have disdained the dishonourable sa-  
 “ crifice, and quitted thee for ever. Restrain  
 “ your raptures, and hear me for a moment.  
 “ You know not yet whom your virtues have  
 “ subdued, or what you must attempt to obtain  
 “ her. I am Zelide, the only daughter of the  
 “ monarch of Armenia. My ancestors long  
 “ gloried in the name of Christians; but un-  
 “ able to resist the barbarous Saracens, accord-  
 “ ing to the policy of the world, they renounced  
 “ their faith, to preserve their power.

“ My father, mistakenly attached to the re-  
 “ ligion of Mahomet, in which he was thus  
 “ bred, led his forces against the invasion of  
 “ Lewis; and, to excite the ardor of his gene-  
 “ rals, declared, that he would bestow me the  
 “ heiress of his throne, in marriage upon him  
 “ who should deserve best in the war. The emu-  
 “ lation which this raised was often fatally ex-  
 “ perienced by their enemies; but still their  
 “ merits were so equal, that none could claim  
 “ his promise until the last battle, when Ach-  
 “ met's recovering the royal standard from the  
 “ enemy unhappily decided in his favour. Too  
 “ soon I learned the unwelcome news; but still  
 “ by my intreaties prevailed upon my father to  
 “ suspend or at least conceal his determination,  
 “ till

“ till this fatal day, when all his generals sol-  
“ liciting him together to put an end to their  
“ importunities, he declared his choice. What  
“ canst thou do to avert this misfortune? Canst  
“ thou by any means accomplish our escape to  
“ thy native land? Gold and jewels in abun-  
“ dance I can bring, to procure the means for  
“ our journey, and make our retirement happy.  
“ To thy honour I am bold to trust myself, nor  
“ aspire to a more exalted state than to be thy  
“ wife; for though I have been obliged to  
“ profess the religion of Mahomet, in my heart  
“ I am a Christian. My mother, who was a  
“ native of Circassia, believed and instructed  
“ me in that holy faith; to preserve which I  
“ promised her, in her last moments, to give  
“ up every thought of worldly grandeur. My  
“ soul is grieved to disobey, and leave my fa-  
“ ther; but a superior duty calls me.”

“ O beauteous princess, (said sir Archibald,  
“ prostrating himself at her feet) how shall the  
“ labours of my life make a return for this hap-  
“ piness, this honour?”

“ Restrain your raptures, (replied the prin-  
“ cess) our time is too precious for them  
“ now. Three days respite only have I been  
“ able to obtain from my father; before they  
“ are expired we must escape from hence, or I  
“ am for ever lost. I leave the manner of  
“ our flight to you. In this casket is some  
“ gold. More, with the richest of my jewels,  
“ will I bring with me to-morrow night, as  
“ soon as darkness shall favour our design, to  
“ the hermit’s cell on the side of the hill, west-  
“ ward of the camp. There let me meet thee  
“ with all the necessary means for our flight.

“ One

“ One only companion shall I bring with me.  
 “ Adieu.”—Saying this, the princess departed, and the eunuch entered and conducted sir Archibald back through the royal pavilion to the place where he had first met him, who immediately returned to the quarters of Achmet.

“ He laid himself down, as if to rest; but spent the remainder of the night in forming schemes for his intended flight; but the difficulties which attended all he could devise drove him almost to despair. At length he resolved upon one that appeared least liable to disappointment. As soon as Achmet arose he went to him, and accosting him with an air of perplexity and distress, “ I come (said he) a suppliant to thy compassion, O generous and princely Achmet. If ever thy servant has found favour in thy sight, listen to the request of my heart. I was troubled on my bed this night, and my soul was terrified by visions. The object of my love, whose image is never absent from my mind, appeared before me in agonies of grief. “ Fly (said she) to my rescue! My father, deaf to my intreaties, and regardless of my distress, prepares to give my hand to another. O fly and save me! Save us both from ruin and despair.”——I awoke in dismay, and in the anguish of my soul am come to thee. Permit me, assist me to go to my native land; and, on the faith of a true knight, I will send you the ransom which you shall require.”

“ I require not a ransom for the liberty of my preserver, (answered Achmet) and willingly consent to your return as soon as my nuptials with the princess shall have confirm-

“ed my happiness. You must not leave me till  
 “you have seen and shared in my joy.”

“O name not happiness or joy (replied Sir  
 “Archibald) before a wretch sinking in despair ;  
 “the sight of my misery would damp your joys.  
 “By all your fondest hopes I conjure you there-  
 “fore, not to delay me a moment. Let me  
 “be gone this very night ; for something warns  
 “my soul never to close my eyes, till I have  
 “set out on this important journey.”

“Far be it from me (said Achmet, moved at  
 “the poignancy of his distress) to oppose the  
 “intimations of thy better genius. Go in  
 “peace ; and may thy journey be successful. If  
 “aught in my power can contribute to it, de-  
 “mand my help with freedom.”

“O generous prince, (answered the knight)  
 “thy goodness overwhelms my soul, and  
 “makes my parting from thee, even on so  
 “dear an occasion, painful. If thou wilt give  
 “the impression of thy signet, I will set out  
 “with two, the poor remains of all my faithful  
 “followers, whom I this day have found among  
 “the captives, as sent by thee on some impor-  
 “tant business ; and trust the conduct of my  
 “steps to Heaven.”——To this proposal Ach-  
 met not only agreed, but also gave him some  
 gold, to make provision for his journey, and  
 then dismissed him with a tender embrace.

“Sir Archibald spent the rest of the day in  
 procuring swift and able horses, with every  
 other convenience requisite for his journey ; and  
 at the appointed hour repaired to the hermit’s  
 cell, where the princess soon after arrived, dis-  
 guised in the habit of a man, and attended by  
 one of her most favourite maidens in the same  
 dress. The illustrious fugitives set out directly,



passing all the guards by virtue of the signet of Achmet, and made such expedition, travelling through private and unfrequented ways, that by the dawn of morning they thought themselves safe from danger of pursuit. As soon as it was light, they stopped by the side of a stream that ran through a thick wood, where they refreshed themselves, and their horses, and rested till the close of the day, sir Archibald watching while his princess slept.

“ In this manner they continued their journey under the immediate protection of Heaven, till they arrived at Constantinople, chusing the road least liable to suspicion, to baffle pursuit; there they directly embarked on board a French ship, which landed them at Marseilles, from whence they journeyed by land to Rochelle, and there hired a ship that carried them safe to Scotland.

“ The joy raised by the arrival of sir Archibald was not confined to his father’s house. The whole kingdom, which had shared in his glory, shared in it. His aged father, who seemed to have lived only to resign his honours to his worthy heir, was unable to support the emotions of his rapture, and expired in his embraces, after having bestowed his benediction on his son, and the fair partner of his escape, to whom earl Archibald was joined in the holy bonds of wedlock, as soon as he had performed the last duties to the honoured remains of his father; for her delicacy had not suffered her to think of marriage, till she was arrived at the end of her travels.

“ Prudence and modesty suggested it to this illustrious pair to conceal the countess’s high  
 5 descent

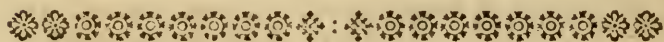
descent, that they might avoid the vain parade of ceremony, and enjoy their lives in retirement, in which earl Archibald's high sense of honour, in concealing his name and country, when a captive, secured them from discovery.

“The only cloud that seemed to over-cast their joy, arose from the pious concern of the countess to hear some account of her father. To procure this, the earl sent one of his faithful men, who had accompanied him in his escape, who undertook not only to gain his lady tidings of him, but also, by some means or other, to lighten his sorrow, by letting him know that she was happy. He set out in the dress of a pilgrim, and performed his journey with success, bringing her word, that, struck with her flight, which he looked upon as a punishment from heaven for his professing the religion of Mahomet, against the admonitions of his conscience, which was secretly inclined to the christian faith, he had resigned his crown to Achmet, and devoted the remainder of his days to Heaven, in a monastery.

“This account compleated the happiness of the countess, who blessed the wise dispensations of providence, which had thus made her the cause of her father's conversion. The earl designed never to have quitted his sweet retirement; but the stronger attachment of loyalty once more called him forth into the busy world. His sovereign dying suddenly, and leaving an infant heir, several of the nobles, stirred up by impious ambition, strove to get the royal infant into their hands that they might murder him, and so usurp his throne; but the vigilance of his

his mother prevented their designs, and conveyed him secretly into France.

“Arouzed by the distress of his sovereign and his country, which was now a prey to all the miseries of anarchy, earl Archibald arose, and by his valour and prudent conduct soon restored peace. The people, in gratitude for this service, with one voice offered him the crown; but he refused it with noble disdain, and obliging them to swear allegiance to their rightful prince, recalled and placed him on the throne of his ancestors.



## C H A P. XVIII.

*Anecdotes of a loyal family concluded. Several instances of uncommon loyalty rewarded in the common manner, with some reflections interesting to those whom they may concern.*

“THE descendants of earl Archibald followed his steps in the paths of honour and virtue. In the days of the unfortunate MARY, whose sufferings ended not even with her life, her fame being still maligned to extenuate the injustice of her fate, the noble earl, head of our house, stood firm in the cause of injured majesty, sacrificing the greater part of his ample possessions, to support his royal mistress.

“When JAMES succeeded to the rights which had proved so fatal to his mother, those services were all forgotten, and his favours lavished

vished on a set of upstart hungry parasites : but not discouraged by this ingratitude, when his ill-fated son wanted the assistance of his loyal subjects, in the impious contest between the ENGLISH and their sovereign, which cost him his sacred life, again our house stood forth, a noble pattern of unshaken loyalty, and were the greatest sufferers in his cause.

“ At the restoration of the monarchy, they met the same reward as they had before from the grand-fire of CHARLES ; nor reaped any other benefit from that happy event, than the gratification of the loyalty, which was the ruling principle of their lives.

“ Gold is purified by fiery trials. This only made their virtues shine with brighter lustre. They shewed the same attachment to the son as they had to his father ; and disdaining to submit to power which they looked upon as unnaturally usurped, followed misguided JAMES, when he abandoned his throne, into a foreign land, exerting their loyalty in service to his person, till Heaven should point out a propitious moment for accomplishing their hopes of recovering for him at least the ancient crown of his ancestors ; a crown which they wore with distinguished glory, till Heaven in its wrath joined another to it, greater indeed in wealth and power, but not of greater honour.

“ Since that fatal period our glory has shone with diminished splendor ; and we have been looked down upon as dependants, by those who dreaded us before as rivals ; and at length, to compleat the ruin of our wretched country, some of her degenerate sons, seduced by bribery and vain hopes of power, sealed their own  
infamy,



infamy, and her disgrace, by formally renouncing every shadow of royalty, and giving up the very style and title of a kingdom which had flourished, for a long succession of ages, before that to which they basely thus betrayed its rights had even gained a name.

“ The venal and inconstant English, a mingled race, made up of every people under heaven, and those whom their example had debauched, may practise and applaud such corruption; but Scotland’s true-born honest sons will ever watch occasion to shake off the shameful yoke, and restore the honour of their country by restoring to its throne a race of kings descended from themselves.

“ Educated in these principles, though under the power which I abhorred, it was natural for me to seize the first opportunity of drawing my sword in the cause of my rightful sovereign. I joined in the attempt made by his son, and was a sharer in his unparalleled sufferings.

“ I had been too active in his interest to escape unnoticed. This precluded every thought of living in my own country, even if I could stoop to dissemble my principles, and submit to the prevailing powers. The honour of my ancestors was now the only inheritance which I derived from them. In the difficulties therefore which such a situation was subject to, my natural recourse was to the profession of arms, the only profession which would not be a disgrace to my blood, unstained from endless ages by the mean arts of industry: and whom should I offer my sword but to the prince

to whom my royal master had himself fled in his distress; and who, I flatter myself; has had no reason to repent of the asylum he afforded me; for though my actions have not been yet rewarded by fortune, my name is not unknown to fame?

“This honest representation will to every candid mind remove the prejudices so injuriously entertained against me, and all in my unhappy circumstances. We come not as preferring another country to our own, or striving to supplant the natives in the favours of fortune. Necessity, irresistible necessity, urges our reluctant steps; and we are received and rewarded accordingly, not with the respect of welcome guests, the liberality and honours due to merit. The coldness of charity frowns upon our approach, and all our services are thought to be overpaid by a bare subsistence. Indeed, such are the sentiments which this undeserved treatment inspires, that, did not the short-sighted policy of our native country bar our return by injunctions insignificant to them, and impossible to be complied with by us, the ardour of our loyalty would be damped, and many of us gladly go home and live in peace; by which means, if we did not actually become their best subjects, we should at least rid them of their most dangerous enemies.”

The appearance of the morning here put an end to his discourse, which his companion heard without interruption, though with visible indifference, and assented to in the politest manner. When they were relieved they retired to their respective tents with equal expedition, though on different occasions; the  
former

former to replenish his snuff-box, which he had emptied in the earnestness of his conversation; and the other to wash his neck-cloth and ruffles, and powder his hair, that he might make a proper appearance when he waited upon his general.



## C H A P. XIX.

*The difference between fighting battles in the field, and in the cabinet. The happiness of having good friends, with further instances of military equity.*

AS the late miscarriage had made a considerable alteration in the situation of affairs, it was necessary to send notice of it to all the parties engaged in the same cause, that they might regulate their measures accordingly. Nothing could draw a stronger picture of human vanity, than the terms in which this account was given. Instead of owning with candour that they had been severely repulsed, and in danger of an absolute defeat, they only said, “that the enemy having escaped by accident from an attack by which they designed to have gained a decisive victory, they had thought proper to make some alterations in the plan of their operations for the rest of the campaign.”

But this vain evasion was instantly seen through; the steps they were obliged to take, in consequence of a disappointment which they affected to treat so lightly, shewed that it was a

matter of the most serious nature, and had effectually broke through all their measures for that campaign, on the success of which they had built such sanguine hopes, and exerted their utmost efforts to promote it.

As there was nothing more to be seen here, I took the opportunity of accompanying a courier who was sent on this occasion to another of the armies, confederate in the same cause, the general of which had acquired such reputation by his conduct, that I expected to find the art of war reduced by him to a regular science, and carried on in a manner worthy of a rational being: how well my expectations were answered, the event will shew.

I found him in his tent, reading over some orders which he had just received from his court. When he had finished them, “What  
 “trouble have I (said he to himself) to keep  
 “these people from ruining themselves? A wo-  
 “man has the vapours, and therefore I must fight  
 “a battle to raise her spirits with the news of  
 “a victory. A minister wants to display his  
 “talents, and I must take a town, that he  
 “may draw up the articles of capitulation;  
 “and yet the least miscarriage in the execution  
 “of their orders, however ill-timed or absurd,  
 “will be laid entirely to my charge. This  
 “is the happiness of serving under people who  
 “know nothing of the matter; who direct the  
 “operations of a campaign in their closets,  
 “draw up armies upon paper, make marches,  
 “and form sieges with their fingers in the  
 “wine spilled on the table; and fight battles,  
 “and beat their enemies as they get drunk.  
 “But I am not to be moved by their humours.  
 “I



“ I have preserved them hitherto in spite of  
 “ themselves, by adhering steadily to my own  
 “ opinion; and I will continue to do so, or  
 “ resign the command, and leave them to  
 “ their fate.”—— Saying this, he gave orders to double all the fortifications of his camp, and then returned a summary answer to the minister, that the situation of affairs at that time made it impossible for him to obey his directions.

Such cautious conduct in an army, whose strength seemed almost to make all caution unnecessary, appeared very extraordinary; but a little observation explained the reason of it. In the mean time other occurrences, new to me, and strange in speculation, though common in the military practice, attracted my attention.

As the general went to take a view of his entrenchments, that he might see where it was most proper to add to their strength, according to his own system, he was met by a deputation from the inhabitants of the country, on a most interesting occasion. Though he was determined not to take the least notice of any thing they could say, he thought proper to give them an hearing, to save appearances.

The person who spoke to him, in the name of the rest, addressing him with an air of respect, mixed with indignation, “ I am sent to your  
 “ excellency (said he) by the few remaining  
 “ inhabitants of this wretched country, to implore your commiseration of their distressed  
 “ state. The misfortunes, impossible to be  
 “ avoided in the seat of a war, have long since  
 “ consumed their strength, and exhausted all  
 “ their regular resources. The contributions

“ demanded by your excellency yesterday, ex-  
 “ ceed their utmost power. The indispensable  
 “ means of subsistence is all that is left them ;  
 “ to take the smallest portion from which must  
 “ make life a curse, and aggravate their mis-  
 “ eries to despair. Your sovereign and our’s  
 “ are confederates in this war, the cause of  
 “ which was originally your’s ; and so must  
 “ the advantage be in the end. We expect  
 “ nothing. Why then must the weight of it  
 “ be laid entirely upon us ? If you come for  
 “ our protection, Why do you not drive our  
 “ enemies away ? If that is not to be done,  
 “ Why not march into their territories, and  
 “ remove to them a burthen which we can no  
 “ longer bear ? It were better for us to sup-  
 “ port but one army, even though that were  
 “ of enemies, than two. The number of our  
 “ very friends has eaten us up. We throw  
 “ ourselves therefore upon your excellency’s  
 “ justice and compassion, and beg an allevia-  
 “ tion of distresses, which we are unable to  
 “ sustain. Represent our case in its proper co-  
 “ lours to your sovereign ; and, in the mean  
 “ time, suspend the execution of orders which  
 “ overwhelm us with despair.”

The general heard this pathetic speech with-  
 out the least emotion ; and as soon as it was  
 concluded, “ I am sorry for your sufferings ;  
 “ (answered he coldly) but the redress of them  
 “ lies not in my power. You must apply to  
 “ the ministry. If they supply me with other  
 “ means to support the war, I shall be glad ;  
 “ till then I must make use of those in my  
 “ hands.”——Then turning directly to an of-  
 ficer who stood near him, he ordered the con-  
 tributions

tributions to be levied, without favour or delay.

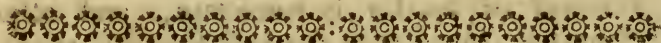
The unsuccessful advocates had scarce departed when an express arrived from one of his advanced posts, to inform him that the enemy had laid all that side of the country in flames, and were just then making some motions which appeared as if they intended to attack him in his entrenchments. His officers heard this account with the highest indignation; and, confiding in their numbers, expressed their eagerness to prevent such an insult, by marching out directly to meet them.

But the general disregarded their ardour, and firmly resolved to pursue his own system; “The enemy should know me too well, (said he) to imagine that I can be taken with such a bait! When there is nothing more to burn, the flames will go out of themselves. All their braving shall not make me quit the advantage of my situation. The event of battles is uncertain, and often proves contrary to the best founded expectation. Beside, their affairs and ours are in a very different state. A victory might accomplish all their designs, which are disappointed as effectually by delay as by a defeat; it is therefore right in them to risk every thing. But the contrary is our case; we might lose every thing by a defeat; and do gain as much by delay, as we could by victory; so that to put any thing to the hazard were madness. As to the disgrace to our honour, in being braved thus, that is nothing. Success alone is honour in war.. I am sorry, it is true, for the ruin of the country;



“but I have other business here beside preserving that, and which I must first attend to; and I shall think myself happy if I can accomplish it at so easy a rate as the ruin of a country that does not belong to us.”——  
Saying this, he continued his ride, absolutely unmoved at the sight of the flames which arose from all the villages in that particular part of the country from whence he had drawn his subsistence, while there was any remaining for him.

There was something so deliberately cruel in protracting the miseries of the innocent in this manner, in order to wear out an enemy whom he was evidently afraid to face in the field, that however consonant it might be to the principles of military equity, and however just his maxim, that “Success alone is honour in war,” I turned away from the sight with abhorrence.



## CHAP. XX.

*War! War in prociēt! The comforts of Greatness. A night-scene, with a continuation of it, neither of the most agreeable nature.*

**T**HOUGH my heart was by this time sick of war, curiosity still had force to make me take a view of the army opposed to this, the character of whose commander promised some variety, and more active scenes at least, if not more rational and humane than those I had



had hitherto seen. “It is not possible (thought I) that the military science, which has been so highly extolled by men of the greatest genius in every age and country, and made the seal of fame, the indisputed title to every advantage of this world, should be such a confused medley of blunders and butchery, carried on headlong, without regard to the most indispensable principles of justice or humanity, or attention to any rational or determined point, beside avarice, or a savage passion for revenge. The generals who make so grand a figure in the writings of poets, and historians, could not have been like these; nor the battles, by which they acquired their immortal glory, such fruitless random scenes of blind, and worse than brutal carnage! I have been often cautioned against forming my judgment too hastily.”

Having confirmed myself in my resolution by these reflections, I was so desirous to put it in execution, that I would not even stay to travel with any other person, as I had done before; but availing myself of the powers with which the spirit had endowed me, I *wished* myself directly into the enemy's camp.

The first things that struck me here were the eagerness and assiduity of every individual, so different from the listless stupidity and carelessness which had given me such disgust in the other armies. The soldiers seemed by their looks to understand the motives of the war in which they were engaged, and to think themselves interested in the event. Such a sight gave me pleasure. “This (thought I) is something worth beholding! These act like men,

“by exerting that reason which distinguishes  
“them from brutes; and that cause must be  
“just which so many approve of, and support  
“with their lives.”

As I was making these reflections, the commander (whom I found to be their sovereign) passed me, and by his affability and encouraging address added wings to the diligence with which they all strove to execute his commands. I joined him directly, studious to observe every look and action of so extraordinary a person.

He was that morning making a general review of his army, which was drawn out for that purpose. Though every thing was strictly regular, and bore the most martial appearance, I remarked that the monarch frequently sighed as he darted his experienced eye along the ranks. He seemed to look for something which he could not find, and melted almost into tears at the tender youth of the greater part of his troops.

But if the private men appeared young and unexperienced, the officers of every degree wore the opposite characters in their countenances. Birth, riches, or favour, evidently had no place in their promotion. They rose by merit alone, and the soldier who deserved command was sure of obtaining it. This was the most effectual provision which human prudence could make to ensure success; nor did the event disappoint it. If the inferiority of his numbers hindered his obtaining decisive victories, the excellent discipline of his forces so far ballanced that advantage, that his enemies could not prevail against him.

When

When he had finished the business of the morning, he retired to his tent, and throwing himself, with a fatigued look and discontented air, into a chair, “When will this horrid  
 “work be at an end? (said he) When shall  
 “my wearied heart have rest? O ambition,  
 “thou madness of misguided man! Thou  
 “source of the worst evils which afflict his  
 “wretched race! To thee are sacrificed all  
 “the tenderesses of humanity, all the most  
 “sacred principles of social and moral virtue.  
 “And for what? To pursue an unessential  
 “phantom, to grasp at a bubble that melts at  
 “the touch, and illudes the empty hand! For  
 “such is the glory of this world, however  
 “highly blazoned by prejudice and vanity; the  
 “echo of a sound that has passed by, the sha-  
 “dow of a cloud that floats in the air.”

He was interrupted in these reflections by the arrival of a courier, with dispatches from one of his ministers. The moment he ran his eye over them, that gloom of lassitude and discontent which overcast his brow vanished, his eye flashed with resentment and martial ardour, and his whole frame seemed to be on fire. He gave orders for all his generals to attend him directly, and then walking a turn or two about his tent, “No! (said he) it is not  
 “come to that yet. Never will I submit to  
 “such ignominious terms, while I have one  
 “subject able to draw a sword. Never will I  
 “tarnish the glory of so many victories by the  
 “least concession. Is my fate to depend on  
 “the caprice of a woman? Are my domini-  
 “ons to be parcelled out by dreaming states-  
 “men? Sooner shall the ravages of war con-



“sume them all, than I will yield to such dishonour. I’ll fight it out to the last man, set fire to the last town with my own hand, and perish in the flames, before my soul shall bend to their desires, or comply with such disgraceful conditions.”

The entrance of his officers broke off his meditations. He paused a moment, to moderate the emotions of his soul, and then addressing himself to them, “My friends, (said he) our enemies insult us. They make proposals too haughty and severe to be received even from victors. But we will bring them to a more moderate way of thinking. I am resolved to make one effort, to put an end to this destructive war. We will this night attack the enemy in such a quarter. Our wary adversary will not run the hazard of succouring his colleague in the dark, for fear an attempt should be made upon his own camp in the mean while; so that, for this time, the advantage of numbers will not be against us. In other respects, I know the difficulty of the undertaking; but difficulties never discourage a brave mind from great attempts. I am sick of the horrors of war, and will see no more of them. We will either conquer or die.”

His generals heard these words with a melancholy, fierce delight. They all wished to see an end put to the calamities which laid their country waste; if that could not be accomplished, death appeared a desirable release from the horrors with which they were surrounded. As soon as they left their sovereign’s presence, therefore, they embraced each other, as men who



who expected not to meet again, and then went to prepare every thing for putting his commands in execution.

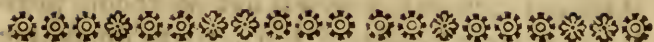
As for the monarch, the approach of such a scene seemed a relief to his mind, by diverting his attention from the reflections which tortured him before. Unentangled in the tender connexions of nature, which, as it were, multiply a man into many selfs for the safety of each dear particular of whom, his anxiety is greater than for his own, he looked forward to the dreadful hour unmoved; and, despising any danger which threatened himself, was not disturbed with sympathetic apprehensions for others.

At length the moment, loaded with the fate of so many thousands, arrived. The horrors of such a sight are beyond description; my soul still sickens at the thought. I have said that the attack was to be made in the night. Nature, as if to hide the madness of mankind, wrapped the guilty scene in tenfold darkness. This was favourable to the assailants. Inspired with the resolution of their sovereign, they knew that their road to victory was right forwards, and rushed on with an impetuosity impossible to be resisted; while their opponents, attacked on every side, knew not where to direct their force. But neither did they know whither to retreat. If distraction therefore made their efforts less effectual, despair supported their resolution. They fought at random, and destroyed their friends as well as their enemies: but still they fought with valour, heightened by despair. At length their entrenchments were all forced, and they were driven,

driven, themselves scarce knew whither. The darkness, which before was against them, proved now their security. Pursuit was impossible. The advantage also had already cost the victors so dear, that they were cautious; as the least miscarriage might reverse the success.

The heart of man must be seared against every feeling of humanity, to support such a sight as the morning-light disclosed. The victorious monarch, animated with all his martial enthusiasm, was unable to bear it. He led his men, harrassed as they were, in pursuit of the enemy, though he expected not to overtake them; but then it removed him from this horrid scene.

As soon as his spirits had cooled a little from the ardour, or rather madness, necessary to support them through their late exertion, he sought to relieve nature by rest. But the labours of his mind were far from being at an end. Sleep had no sooner overpowered his weary senses, than his imagination was at work, and placed him in the midst of the tumults and confusion from which he was but just delivered. He gave aloud the several words of command, and fought over again the whole battle of the night before, with as much eagerness and anxiety as if he was actually engaged, till at length the hurry of his spirits and agitation of his whole frame awoke him, little refreshed by such broken slumbers. Such a life could not afford pleasure in the contemplation. I was just turning from him, surfeited with *heroism* and *greatness*, when an affair that shewed his character in a new light attracted my attention.



## C H A P. XXI.

*An approved medicine for a sick mind. A curious conversation between two great persons, with a compendious method of acquiring fame.*

WHEN he arose from his thorny pillow, he went to a trunk, and taking out a book, "Learning (said he, sighing) has been called the medicine of the mind. Let me try if I can find it so. No mind ever wanted a medicine to heal its sickness, more than mine does at this moment."—Then reading a page or two, "Aye, (continued he) these are fine schemes, if they could but be brought to bear. Any of them would ensure the wished-for, envied epithet of great, without the fatigue of this horrid trade of war; though I much fear this too will disappoint me as that did, and that in the end I shall find I have consumed my life in building castles in the air."

He then paused a moment, in a discontented mood, and, throwing by the book, took up a written paper, on which he had scarce cast his eye when he seemed to have found the remedy he wanted. A smile of self-complacency softened his brow, his eyes sparkled with pleasure, and his heart throbbed with conscious pride, as he read it over most emphatically to himself. "Why did I not fix my hopes of fame, my claim to immortality, on these? (said he, swelling

“ swelling into tenfold consequence as he  
 “ spoke) the muses would not have disdained  
 “ my addressees; they would have crowned me  
 “ with that glory which I sought for in vain in  
 “ philosophy, and fear I pursue with no better  
 “ prospect of success in war. But soft! Is not  
 “ this the day on which that favourite of the  
 “ muses, *Crambo*, promised to come and shew  
 “ me his last work? Who knows but I may  
 “ effect the sum of all my designs by his assist-  
 “ ance? Every other business must give place  
 “ to this. I would not miss the pleasure of  
 “ conversing with him, or run the hazard of  
 “ any other’s seeing his works before me, for  
 “ many reasons.”—— Saying this, he called  
 one of his attendants, and, sending some general  
 directions to his officers, gave orders that no  
 one should be admitted to him that morning  
 but a particular person, whom he described.

He had not waited long, when the expected  
 visitor arrived, disguised in such a manner  
 as must effectually conceal him. The monarch  
 received him with the greatest familiarity,  
 and pointing to a chair near himself, “ Sit  
 “ down, my friend, (said he) distinction is un-  
 “ necessary among the muses sons. You won-  
 “ der, I doubt not, at my desiring you to  
 “ come in that disguise; but the reason was  
 “ this: In my situation every motion is ex-  
 “ posed to notice. When I have a mind,  
 “ therefore, to steal an hour from care, I am  
 “ obliged to use some artifice of this kind, to  
 “ conceal my design. I am now thought to  
 “ be engaged on the most weighty affairs;  
 “ and your dress, with the mysterious manner  
 “ of your introduction, favours the deceit, and  
 “ makes



“ makes you pass for some secret emissary who  
 “ has brought me intelligence. Were it known  
 “ that I enjoy one hour of social converse,  
 “ like another man, it would take off from my  
 “ importance, and weaken that implicit respect  
 “ which the nature of my affairs makes indis-  
 “ pensible. This is the blessing of pre-emi-  
 “ nence : painful pre-eminence, eminent in  
 “ woe.

“ But let us quit so disagreeable a subject.  
 “ Have you brought me the piece you men-  
 “ tioned in your letter ? I long to see it ; and  
 “ hope you have not taken the least notice of  
 “ it to any other person living. Alexander  
 “ was not more jealous of his tutor’s publish-  
 “ ing his knowledge for the instruction of the  
 “ world, than I am of your communicating  
 “ your works, even by the bare mention of their  
 “ names, before I have had the first perusal of  
 “ them. Like him, I would engross the sole  
 “ enjoyment.”

“ Your majesty does me the highest honour  
 “ by this jealousy ; (answered the other) but I  
 “ am afraid the object will be found unworthy.  
 “ However, such as it is, I lay it at your  
 “ feet.”

——“ But has no living person seen, nor  
 “ even heard of it ?”

——“ None, I can most truly assure your  
 “ majesty. I obeyed your commands with the  
 “ greatest care. Here it is. The subject, I  
 “ own, is trifling ; but I hope the execution  
 “ will not displease you. It is a short confu-  
 “ tation of all the prejudices which have so  
 “ long enslaved the human mind, under the  
 “ title of religion. I have proved, in an alle-  
 “ gorical

“gorical history, by familiar instances taken  
 “from real or at least possible life, which is  
 “the same thing, that chance governs the  
 “world, and every occurrence in it; and that  
 “to attribute them to any other cause, such as  
 “infinite power, wisdom, goodness, and such  
 “like, is most absurd, as they are plainly con-  
 “trary to the effects of such a cause; and to  
 “give a greater force to my reasoning, I have  
 “all along affected to treat these very notions,  
 “which I controvert, with the most solemn  
 “respect.”

“Just as I have written with the greatest  
 “acerbity against maxims (interrupted the  
 “king) which I practise every hour of my  
 “life.”——Then running his eye hastily over  
 the first page, which chance had opened to  
 him, “This is the thing (continued he, in a  
 “rapture) which has been ever wanted to clear  
 “the eyes of man, and enlighten his mind  
 “with the radiance of real knowledge. The  
 “voice of reason here utters the sacred words  
 “of truth, adorned with all the beauties of  
 “imagination. How exactly have you hit  
 “upon my sentiments! how forcibly expressed  
 “them! My actions must have long proved  
 “to all who are capable of lifting up the veil  
 “which necessity obliges man to wear, that  
 “this is my opinion. You must leave the  
 “manuscript with me, that I may peruse it at  
 “my better leisure; and remember, I have  
 “your promise, that you will not mention a  
 “word of it to any mortal. I have reasons for  
 “this injunction, which may not be disagreea-  
 “ble to you.”

——“Nothing that your majesty commands  
 “can

“ can be disagreeable to me; nor need you  
 “ doubt my service. Here is another little  
 “ thing, a mock-heroic poem, in which the  
 “ folly of all the philosophy, and the false pre-  
 “ tensions to knowledge, which have imposed  
 “ upon the world for so many generations, are  
 “ properly displayed. It is something of the  
 “ same nature with the other, the design of  
 “ which it compleats, by shewing that there  
 “ is nothing certain in this life; and, there-  
 “ fore, that true wisdom consists in doing that  
 “ which is most agreeable to ourselves, with-  
 “ out regard to any contrary opinions, how-  
 “ ever hallowed to foolish veneration by the  
 “ rust and cobwebs of antiquity.”

—“ My system still. Yes! let me have it.  
 “ My head is stunned with the noise of war,  
 “ and wants the harmony of your numbers to  
 “ compose it. This is poetry. This is the  
 “ genuine effusion of a mind inspired. Such  
 “ writing disdains the critic’s rage, and even  
 “ rises above the wreck of time. What ele-  
 “ gance! What fire! How bold, and yet how  
 “ clear.”

—“ Your majesty’s approbation is the  
 “ highest object of my ambition. It is fame,  
 “ Though till that sanction is made public, I  
 “ doubt not but I shall have an outcry raised  
 “ against me, particularly on account of the  
 “ first work, for bringing ridicule to aid my  
 “ arguments, against opinions so long conse-  
 “ crated, by ignorance, to blind respect. But  
 “ it was impossible to restrain the sallies of wit  
 “ on subjects which lay so open to its lash.”

—“ Most

——“ Most certainly; nor are they in the  
“ least reprehensible. A poignant jest often  
“ shames a man out of an opinion which no  
“ argument could make him give up. You  
“ tell me with the assurance of sacred truth,  
“ that no man living knows any thing of ei-  
“ ther of these works. In return for your  
“ complying with my desire in that, I will  
“ now intrust you with the darling secret of my  
“ soul. No man must ever know any thing  
“ of them. I mean, as your’s. Shall I tell  
“ you all? You are sensible of the ardour with  
“ which I pant for fame. Though chance has  
“ thrown me into the more turbulent scenes of  
“ life, my heart languishes for the happiness of  
“ retirement, for the glory that is acquired by  
“ the calmer works of learned ease: nor were  
“ my first essays to obtain it so unsuccessful as  
“ to discourage the pursuit, did the indispen-  
“ sible duties of my station permit it.

“ Can you then, my friend, indulge this  
“ ruling passion of my soul so far, as to give up  
“ these children of your brain to my adop-  
“ tion, and let me produce them to the world  
“ as my own, without danger of paternal  
“ fondness’s breaking out, and claiming them?  
“ I know it is a delicate and difficult request;  
“ but I will amply recompense your com-  
“ pliance, and then you will soon be able to  
“ produce more. The spring from whence  
“ these flowed is not exhausted.

“ Beside, I claim a kind of right to them.  
“ They are the very sentiments of my soul,  
“ which I designed to have published as soon  
“ as I could spare time to dispose them into  
“ proper order. In this you have prevented

“ me;



“ me ; may I not say rather, saved me the trouble, and now present my own anticipated offspring to me, with the advantage of being educated by your hand. The matter is literally mine, as much as it is your’s : the form indeed is all your own. What do you say ? Are you willing to gratify my desire ? ”

—— “ Every command of your majesty’s is entitled to immediate obedience ; I most willingly consign them into your hands, to dispose of as you please, either to publish or absolutely suppress them for ever. Could I have thought of their having such a glorious fate, I should have laboured to make them more worthy of it.”

—— “ They are very well. It is the subject that particularly strikes me. If I find any thing amiss in the manner of treating it, I will myself correct it. Here ! take this order to my treasurer : You see it is expressly said to be for *secret* service.”

“ Your majesty’s munificence (answered the lucky author, who was so astonished at the greatness of the sum, that it was some time before he had power to speak), overwhelms me with confusion. This is too much ; too much for me to take ! ”

—— “ But not for me to give (replied the monarch, smiling). Let me see you again before you go away. I must now give some orders, which are this moment come into my head ; but I shall be at leisure by the time you return from the treasurer.”

The author bowed with the most profound respect, and departed in evident happiness of heart.

When he was gone, the king, looking at his new purchase with the highest delight, “At length (said he) I have accomplished my design. These will extend my fame through the whole circle of the human powers. I shine already as a legislator and historian; these add the characters of a poet, and a divine. Singularity is the first step to eminence. A *great* man should do nothing in the common way. Now that I have unhinged the religion of the world, as soon as I am at leisure I will devise a new one of my own, and erect it on the ruins of the old. This is all I want to confirm my being the *greatest* man of this, or any age.”

When he had pleased himself with these reflections for some time, he resumed his wonted thoughtful look, and went to meet his ministers, who, struck with his appearance, listened to his words with a kind of religious veneration, prepared to obey whatever he should command, without presuming to discuss it even in their own minds, as if he had been a being of a superior nature.

Having dispatched these affairs, he retired to meet the happy author, who had received the money, and was returned according to his orders. “Well, (said the king) I hope you don’t regret the exchange you have made. I have nothing more to say to you at this time, but to desire that I may hear constantly from you. Much as I am involved in other affairs, I shall always find time to correspond with you; and observe, that I insist on your laying aside all formality, and writing your thoughts as freely as they rise  
“in

“in your mind; as I, and all lovers of philosophic truth do.”

“Your majesty (answered the other) heaps new honours on me, by every new command. I will obey you with the utmost punctuality, and think myself happy if my poor works can merit the approbation of so consummate a judge.”—— The scene now grew so fulsome, each flattering the other in the grossest manner, that I was glad when it was ended.

This contemptible instance of vanity sullied the lustre of the monarch's other qualities, and made me so sick of ambition in every shape, that I could bear the sight of him no longer. I therefore took my leave of heroism and *greatness*, of which my heart was sick, and departed along with the author, in whom I saw something that raised my curiosity to be better acquainted with him.



### C H A P. XIII.

*A remarkable instance of poetic gratitude and justice, with some anecdotes of a celebrated genius.*

THE moment he left the monarch's presence, he made all possible haste to get out of his reach also, for fear of his changing his mind, and resuming his most profuse present. When his heart was freed from this fear, on his entering the territories of a neutral power,

power, he stopped, to recover his fatigue, and consider how he should dispose of his new fortune in the most proper manner. After a variety of schemes, he at last resolved to fix his abode in the territories of a certain free but poor state, where he should be at liberty to pursue his own inclinations without interruption, and gain respect by the magnificence which he was now able to display.

This first point being settled, his thoughts naturally recurred to the means by which he had acquired his fortune. Amply as the monarch had paid him for the honour of fathering his works, his vanity took the alarm at the fame he should lose, and envy determined him to break faith with his benefactor, and betray his weakness by publishing the works in his own name, as soon as ever the king should declare them to be his; for he would not do it sooner to prevent him, that the detection might heighten the disgrace, the thoughts of his being under obligation, to which he meant to make so base a return, inflaming his heart with the most malignant hatred. “ I will expose him  
“ to the contempt of mankind, (said he) for his  
“ meanness and vanity. He never shall have  
“ the honour of my works. When he has  
“ plumed himself in the merit of them for a  
“ while, I’ll strip the gawdy daw of his stolen  
“ feathers, and point him out to universal ridicule. He make alterations too! and correct my errors! Let him, let him expose  
“ himself! The coarse patches will betray the  
“ bungling hand that puts them on, and serve  
“ for a convenient foil to the rest. If he desires fame, let him earn it, and not strive  
“ thus



“ thus to steal it from another. He never shall  
 “ have the honour of my works. Had he not  
 “ been a fool, he might have foreseen this, and  
 “ in the plenitude of his tyranny have put it  
 “ out of my power to defeat his design, by  
 “ taking away my life; but I am now beyond  
 “ his reach, and shall take care to keep my-  
 “ self so.”—— Then melting into rapture, at  
 the thought of his wealth, “ I will live (con-  
 “ tinued he) like a prince among those repub-  
 “ licans, whose parsimony will be a foil to  
 “ my munificence. Every thing about me,  
 “ every thing I do shall have an air of gran-  
 “ deur; I’ll build a theatre at my own house,  
 “ where I will have my works represented ac-  
 “ cording to my own taste, to my chosen  
 “ friends.”

The deliberate baseness of this resolution, so  
 contradictory to the proper use of the powers  
 which produced the occasion of it, tempted me  
 to look back to the principal occurrences in the  
 life of so extraordinary a person. He was born  
 in a neighbouring country, where genius is  
 encouraged by approbation, and starves in the  
 midst of flattery. Abilities, such as his, soon  
 distinguished themselves. He became the fa-  
 vourite of the publick, and heard nothing but  
 his own praises. But his reign was not long.  
 He thought with a freedom and spirit which  
 gave jealousy to a government established on  
 the principles of despotism, and was obliged to  
 fly his native land, to avoid falling a sacrifice  
 to his fame.

The country in which he took refuge was  
 in every respect the reverse of that he left. Ap-  
 probation was given sparingly, and never soon;

but the more substantial reward of present profit seldom disappointed merit; and rational liberty gave genius its full scope. Here he first tasted the sweets of independency, and formed schemes for establishing himself in the possession of that inestimable blessing. But his eagerness disappointed him, by betraying him into some actions which obliged him to quit that country as precipitately as he had his own, to avoid a more ignominious fate.

After some time spent in discontented rambling, this prince, whom his fame had reached, not only gave him an asylum in his dominions, but also heaped his favours on him so lavishly, that he resumed his hopes of independency, which this last affair enabled him to accomplish in a manner he had never even raised wishes to. The return he meditated, and did afterwards partly make (for when he considered more coolly, he dropt that part of his scheme of letting the king publish them first, for fear his credit should overbalance his own, and make himself appear the plagiary, and therefore printed them directly in his own name; a perfidy which the discontented monarch did not dare to impeach, and could not punish) was agreeable to the natural tendency of his disposition, and of a piece with his behaviour to the people whose beneficence had afforded him relief, and first raised his hopes, whom he calumniated with the most malignant virulence, as soon as he was out of the reach of their offended laws.

The abilities which enabled him to triumph over so many difficulties as his folly drew him into, were certainly very great, though vanity  
much

much lessened their merit. An affectation of singularity, of shewing himself wiser than all the rest of the world, making him dispute the truth of, and treat with contempt these principles which had ever been held in the highest respect, and established as the rules of moral action, the foundations of religious faith.

Impious and absurd as such vanity was, it found applause and imitation from the kindred vanity of the greater part of mankind; and the interest they had in supplanting an authority that contradicted their practice, and made it criminal in the eyes of others, and dangerous in their own.

To this cause chiefly he was indebted for the rapidity of his rise to fame; for literary merit, however great, is obliged to stand the test of time before it meets general approbation, where some lucky circumstance does not concur thus to favour it.

Shocked at such a prostitution, I left him to pursue his own machinations; and, having abundantly satisfied my curiosity with military matters, resolved to change the scene of my observations, and go to the courts of the powers engaged in war, in hopes that, for the credit of human nature, I might find the measures of their civil government deduced from more rational principles than those which appeared to influence the conduct of their armies.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

THE  
R E V E R I E;  
OR, A  
Flight to the Paradise of Fools.  
B O O K II.

\*\*\*\*\*

C H A P. I.

*A council scene. The mildness of female government; with a remarkable instance of the happy effect of reproof upon great minds.*

THE first court which I thought proper to take a view of was that of the power most immediately engaged in the war against the prince whose camp I had just left. Accordingly I *wished* myself thither directly, to avoid the pain of travelling through the scenes of desolation and misery exhibited by all the countries around.

On my arrival I found the sovereign seated in council, in the midst of his ministers. There appeared in his looks a phlegm, which  
in



in different countries is taken to denote the different qualities of wisdom and stupidity; and which here seemed to have extended its soporific influence over all present, who sat with their eyes fixed upon the table, as if waiting in suspension of thought for something to set their faculties at work.

They had continued in this state for some time, when a female entered and placed herself at the right hand of the sovereign. Her features were strong, and masculine; she was dressed in the robes of independent royalty, and the haughtiness of her looks and deportment shewed that she esteemed herself superior to all the princes of the world.

The moment she entered, the whole council assumed a new appearance. The sovereign looked abashed, and the ministers, roused from their former serenity, waited for her words with fear and trembling. “ I ordered your  
 “ attendance, (said she, looking fiercely round,  
 “ the fire of her soul flashing from her eyes as  
 “ she spoke) to let you know what I will have  
 “ done in the present conjuncture. I will no  
 “ longer bear to be braved thus by my vassals,  
 “ who by the weakness of some of my predecessors have acquired this unnatural power  
 “ of rebelling against their sovereign. They  
 “ shall be declared public enemies to the general state, and the rest of the feudatories obliged to join their forces, according to the ordinances of those who gave them the power  
 “ they now possess, to reduce them to their proper  
 “ state of obedience. When these have done  
 “ that, the troops of my own dominions shall  
 “ humble them also. I will no longer be op-  
 H 3 posed

“ posed by such ingrateful slaves ; for such they  
“ were, and such they shall be again. And  
“ you, sir, (addressing herself to the sovereign)  
“ must enforce this sentence with your autho-  
“ rity. The rank to which you have been  
“ raised by your alliance with me, enables  
“ you to do any thing, if you had but proper  
“ spirit.

“ Madam, (answered the sovereign) I—I—  
“ I can do nothing. You have taken all the  
“ power into your own hands, and left nothing  
“ for me to do.”

“ Yes, (replied she, with a look of the  
“ highest contempt) you can drink away your  
“ senses; and that is all you mind. Had I  
“ been blessed with an husband of spirit equal  
“ to my own, we should have subdued the  
“ world. All mankind would have been my  
“ slaves. But now the work is all my own ;  
“ you only contribute an empty name.”——  
Then turning to her secretary, “ Let this de-  
“ cree be notified to all the other vassals with-  
“ out loss of time, that they may prepare to  
“ obey it.”

“ May it please your most august majesty,  
“ (said the secretary, making an obeisance as  
“ low as adoration) is this sentence intended  
“ only against the principal power with whom  
“ you are at war ? Or are all his friends, those  
“ I mean who have not directly declared against  
“ you, to be included ?”

“ All, all ; (answered she) their presump-  
“ tion is equal, and so shall be their punish-  
“ ment. Those who even hesitate to obey my  
“ commands I hold to be my enemies, and  
“ will treat them as such.”

“ Your

“Your most sacred majesty’s commands (replied the secretary) should be a law to all the world. Here is a memorial which I have this day received from the minister of his principal ally. It relates immediately to the purpose of this your majesty’s most magnanimous and just resolution, their conscious dread of which anticipates your tremendous declaration.”

“Let it be read;” (said she, impatiently) “I will hear what it contains, though all the world shall not make me alter my resolution.”

“Far be it from your servant to suppose any such thing; (answered the secretary) the will of so mighty a princess should be as immutable as fate. Shall I read the whole, or only give a summary of the contents? It is very long; and not always conceived with that respect due to your sublimity, from the other sovereigns of the earth.”

“The substance of it (replied she haughtily) will be as much as I shall hear, and more than I shall pay regard to.”

“Hem! ahem! In the first place, (said he, clearing his voice, and casting his eye upon the paper in his hand) the memorialist presumes to throw the blame of the present war entirely upon your majesty; accusing you of a design to overturn the just rights and liberties of those whom he calls the sovereign princes and independent members of the state; and in consequence of this accusation justifies the opposition made by your enemy, and the assistance contributed by others to the support of a cause common to them all.

“ He presumes likewise to deny and protest  
 “ against your irresistible majesty’s undoubted  
 “ right of employing the authority of his most  
 “ serene majesty, your royal consort, in a dis-  
 “ pute which interferes not with his state, but  
 “ belongs entirely to your own hereditary do-  
 “ minions, audaciously and directly insisting,  
 “ that, instead of aiding your majesty’s designs,  
 “ he ought to oppose his whole force to defeat  
 “ them, agreeably to the true intent of the  
 “ high trust reposed in him when he was raised  
 “ to his present exalted station. In quality  
 “ then of sovereign of other dominions, he  
 “ takes the liberty to upbraid your incompar-  
 “ able majesty with ingratitude, asserting, that,  
 “ without mentioning the many obligations  
 “ conferred upon your royal ancestors, your  
 “ majesty has yourself been supported on your  
 “ throne by his assistance, against the efforts  
 “ of those very enemies of your august house,  
 “ whom you have now most unnaturally join-  
 “ ed with against him, your only firm and ef-  
 “ fectual ally; and, lastly, he has the assur-  
 “ ance to declare, that he will now employ the  
 “ same power in defence of what he calls his  
 “ own rights, and those of his allies; with  
 “ which he most insolently adds, that he fears  
 “ not to humble that ingrateful——”

While the secretary was making this recital,  
 every feature of his mistress’s face was distorted  
 with the different passions of pride, rage, and  
 revenge; but these last words hurried her be-  
 yond all patience. “ Villain! (said she, snatch-  
 “ ing the memorial from his trembling hand,  
 “ and throwing it in his face) How darest thou  
 “ repeat such insolence before me? Obligations

“ to

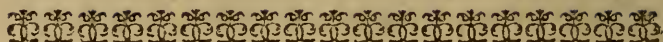


“ to him ! he only did his duty ; and was over-  
 “ paid by my acceptance of it. My house,  
 “ the first on earth, has a right to every thing  
 “ in the power of inferior princes, to contri-  
 “ bute to its exaltation ; nor shall any petty,  
 “ limited, sovereign presume to call my com-  
 “ mands in question, or censure my making  
 “ alliances with whom I please. Whatever I  
 “ will is right ; and this I will support against  
 “ all their opposition, while I have a subject  
 “ able to draw a sword.”

The vehemence with which she spoke these  
 words awoke her royal consort, who was so  
 affected by the rebuke she had given him just  
 before, that he fell asleep. Starting therefore,  
 “ Hah ! What ! What opposition ? (said he,  
 “ staring about, and repeating her last word).  
 “ What opposition ?”

“ Peace, idiot ! sot ! (answered his gentle  
 “ mate) the only opposition I regard, is that  
 “ of your indolence and stupidity.”—— Then  
 turning again to the secretary, “ Draw up the  
 “ decree (continued she) directly, and enforce  
 “ it with every expression of contempt for the  
 “ writer of this insolent memorial. I’ll shew  
 “ him what regard I pay to his upbraidings ;  
 “ and that I hold the services he values himself  
 “ so highly upon, to be all cancelled from the  
 “ moment he dared to disobey my sovereign.  
 “ will in any instance.”——

Saying this, she arose ; and, dismissing the  
 council with a motion of her hand, retired,  
 her royal consort not venturing to speak a  
 word.



## C H A P. II.

*A ready salve for a sore conscience, with a proper reward for piety. An unexpected disappointment shews greatness of soul in a striking light. A day concluded consistently.*

FROM council her majesty went into her own apartment, where she met her confessor, who was waiting for her. “I sent for you, father, (said she) to unburthen my conscience, which cannot bear the weight of any thing that even looks like a crime. The event of this war not immediately answering my expectations, I have consented to a proposal made to me, of having my enemy taken off by poison; I have also given orders to one of my generals, to march into the territories of those states who refused to join with me in the war, and to burn and destroy all before him, putting man, woman, and child, to the sword, to revenge the disrespectful manner in which they refused to comply with my demands, and strike a terror into others for the future. Now, as I conclude that both these orders have been put in execution this morning, I sent for you to receive absolution.”

“The piety of your most sacred majesty (answered the ecclesiastic) is highly commendable, and deserves the indulgence of the holy church in the most unlimited degree. Such

“ Such things, to be sure, are in general criminal; but particular circumstances may change their nature. The urgency of your majesty’s affairs requires dispatch, and your honour must be vindicated. These considerations are in themselves of weight to authorize what else ought to be avoided. But there is another reason still stronger, and which makes the actions that hurt the tenderness of your conscience meritorious, instead of reprehensible. Your enemy is an heretic, and therefore out of the protection of all laws human and divine; and those who refused to assist you against him, though not formally heretics themselves as yet, discover by that refusal a kind of tendency that way, and should be prevented by wholesome chastisement; the first duty of all true sons of the church being to extirpate heresy.”

Having quieted her majesty’s conscience by this pious distinction, he proceeded to the ceremony of giving her absolution, which he performed with a solemnity and parade equally impious and ridiculous on such an occasion.

When this important affair was finished, addressing his penitent with a look of joy, “ I have the happiness (said he) to congratulate your majesty on the highest honour which can be obtained in this world. Our most holy father, in token of his approbation of your zeal for the glory of the church, has thought proper to grant you an addition to your titles, which gives you the pre-eminence over all the potentates on earth; and has blessed me with the office of imposing it in his name, whenever your majesty pleases

“to appoint a time for the glorious ceremonies  
 “which his wisdom has instituted for that pur-  
 “pose.”

“I have a just sense of his holiness’s favour,  
 “(answered she) and shall be glad to receive  
 “it in the proper manner as soon as possible,  
 “as my whole soul is implicitly devoted to  
 “the ceremonies of our divine religion.”

“To-morrow then (said he) will I perform the  
 “sacred office of this second baptism, and give  
 “you a title that shall be expressive of the regard  
 “you so nobly shew at this time for the ad-  
 “vancement of the faith; for which purpose I  
 “will go directly and give orders for adorning  
 “the great church with all the precious and  
 “costly images, and relics of the saints and  
 “angels, who will look down with pleasure  
 “to behold your majesty raised to a degree of  
 “honour superior even to their own. You  
 “will please to command all the great officers  
 “of your court to attend, that nothing may  
 “be wanting to make the ceremony truly  
 “grand.”

While her majesty was preparing for this great affair, my curiosity prompted me to see how her royal consort disposed of his time. As soon as the council was broken up, in which he made the important figure that has been related, he hastened to his own particular apartments, where, throwing off the mockery of royalty with which he was encumbered, he sat down with some of his most intimate favourites, to drown the cares of state in wine.

The conversation was suited to the occasion. “For my part (said the sovereign, filling his rummer) I cannot conceive what plea-  
 “sure



“ sure those people find in politics, and wars,  
 “ and such like turbulent perplexing matters.  
 “ I never think of the former, that they do not  
 “ make my head ake; though the truth is, her  
 “ majesty, for the most part, saves me that  
 “ trouble. And then, for fighting! I bless  
 “ my stars I am no hero; nor, while I have a  
 “ bottle of such wine as this before me, envy  
 “ any of them their laurels.”

“ It would be happy for the world, (said  
 “ one of the company, while the sovereign  
 “ quaffed off his bumper) if all princes  
 “ were of your majesty’s way of thinking.  
 “ The pleasures of life might then be enjoyed  
 “ in peace and satisfaction.”—— This turned  
 the discourse naturally on those pleasures, which  
 they all talked over with the greatest keenness,  
 till it was time to go to the opera, where his  
 majesty seldom failed to spend the evening.

His royal consort, elated at the thought of  
 the mighty things which had been done for her  
 that morning, and of the sacred honour she  
 was to receive next day, went thither also, to  
 indulge the happiness of her heart; but hap-  
 pening in the course of the entertainment to  
 observe that her husband looked with more than  
 common earnestness at one of the female per-  
 formers, she gave orders to one of her officers  
 to remove her that very night out of her do-  
 minions, without permitting her husband to  
 see her, not bearing that any other should in-  
 terfere with her in the only advantage she  
 reaped from her marriage.

The ceremony of the next day exceeded all  
 description. Every instance of pomp, both se-  
 cular and religious, which superstition and va-  
 nity

nity could suggest, was displayed to make the farce complete, without any regard to the danger of offending the Deity by such an hypocritical prostitution of rites appropriated to his service, and many of them appointed by himself.

But the joy of her most pious majesty was soon damped. She had flattered herself, that the scheme for poisoning her enemy was laid so well, and committed to such trusty hands as to be safe from disappointment or detection. On this her confessor built so strongly that he resolved to promise some signal and speedy instance of success, as a divine ratification of her new title. Accordingly, in the oration with which he concluded the ceremony, he worked himself up into the appearance of prophetic enthusiasm, and ventured even to point out the death of her enemy, as if by immediate inspiration, describing his agonies in a rhetorical flourish, and attributing his fate to the hand of Heaven, as a punishment for his rebellion against his sovereign.

The effect which this had upon the multitude is not to be expressed. Prepared by their natural superstition to believe every thing their priests pleased to tell them, they looked for the instant accomplishment of this prediction with such strong faith, that, had the expected news arrived at that time, they would have received it implicitly as a miracle; and most probably have fallen down and worshipped their sovereign, in whose favour it would have appeared to have been wrought.

But, unluckily for the poor prophet, just as he had finished his declamation, an account was received that the attempt upon the king's life  
had

had miscarried, and her most pious majesty's privy to it been detected in the plainest manner, so as to reflect an indelible disgrace upon her in the eyes of the world; and that her army, which was to have ravaged the territories of his friends, had been repulsed with great loss, and by a body of such inferior force as to look like the immediate interposition of Providence. The consequence of this may be easily conceived. The preacher was ashamed to shew his face: the glorious title was turned into ridicule; and her majesty was overwhelmed with vexation at her disappointment.

As soon as she had recovered herself a little, she summoned her council again on this important occasion. After long deliberation, it was at last concluded to give up a considerable part of the territories of some of her most faithful friends, to one of the powers confederate with her in the war, to induce it to exert all its force to oppress an enemy from whom they met such unexpected resistance; for, so strong was the hatred of her soul against him, that she would ruin herself rather than he should escape ruin. As to the charge of being concerned in the infamous and horrid scheme of poisoning him, she affected to treat it with contempt, as a groundless slander, to which she disdained to make any answer.

But the sanguine hopes she built upon this absurd expedient, which brought into her neighbourhood a rival infinitely more dangerous than the one whom she wanted to destroy, were soon overthrown. Her expresses were scarce dispatched, when she received an account of the death of her ally, upon whose

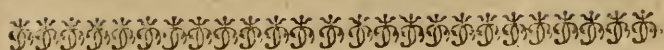
assistance

assistance she depended; and from whose successor she had just reason to apprehend even worse than the disappointment of her hopes, as his avowed attachment to her enemy had engaged her in intrigues against his life also, which he had discovered, and would now most probably shew his resentment of, by turning his forces against her.

This event disconcerted all her schemes, and shewed her that the ruin of her enemy, which she had pursued with such inveteracy, and flattered herself with the thought of being so near, was now removed farther off than ever, if not absolutely out of her power to accomplish. However, the blind implacability of her soul was not to be convinced. She resolved to double all her efforts; she ordered every subject in her dominions to take arms; and lastly proposed to the professed enemies of her faith, to share with her the conquest which they should assist her to make in a war, alledged to have been undertaken on a religious motive, sacrificing every obligation, human and divine, to an impotent desire of revenge; and thus concluded a day hallowed in the annals of her reign, by the reception of her sacred title.

Such scenes were too shocking to be dwelt on. I resolved to leave that court directly; and took the opportunity of travelling with a courier whom her sacred majesty sent to one of her allies, that I might take a view of that part of his dominions in which he resided at that time, and learn something of the manners of the people with whom I was yet unacquainted.





## C H A P. III.

*More happy effects of greatness; with a new way of punishing disobedience, and making the most of power.*

THE courier had scarce entered the territories of the prince to whom he was sent, when he was seized by a band of free-booters, who, without any regard to his character, dragged him away to their chief. It was late when he fell into their hands; and as they had prowled to a considerable distance from home, they concluded to stop at their own place of habitation till morning.

Nothing could equal the brutal behaviour of these savages, but their worse than brutal insolence, and the misery in which they lived. They threw their captive into the corner of a hovel, in which the leader of the gang dwelt, among their swine and cows; the best place in the hut, if any could be called by that title, being reserved for their horses, who fared in every respect better than their masters; and then, devouring a mess of food which any human-creatures, not immediately impelled by famine, would have turned from with loathing, lay down to sleep upon an heap of straw, all mixed together, without any regard to decency or difference of sex, where they snored till next morning; when they arose as soon as it was light, and licking up what their dogs had left.

left of their over-night's fare, hurried their captive away to their lord.

When they arrived at his castle they met him going to his stables, and, falling on their knees in the wet and mire with which the whole place was plentifully covered, informed him of their success. The courier, without waiting for his lordship's making them any reply, addressed him boldly, and, telling what he was, complained heavily of the outrage he had suffered, and demanded to be set immediately at liberty, to pursue his journey, as he was charged with dispatches of the utmost importance to his sovereign. The air of freedom with which he spoke offended the pride of the mighty lord; but his dignity was struck at by this last word in a manner that he did not think proper to bear, for he would not have his vassals even suspect that he paid obedience to any power upon earth. "Take hence that slave, (said he, without deigning to look at him) and throw him into the dungeon. I'll chastise him for his insolence. My sovereign! A *nobleman* owns no sovereign." Then turning to his people, who still continued kneeling, "What more have you brought me? (said he) I sent you word that I was going to attend the great convention of the states, and wanted money."

To this terrible speech the principal of the gang answered, that they had no money themselves, nor were able to get any, though they had scoured the whole country in search of it. "Villains! dogs! (exclaimed his lord, flying at the poor trembling wretch, and beating him unmercifully with his horse-whip) Tell

"me

“ me not that you have no money. ‘ You must  
 “ find it for me, or I’ll sell yourselves, your  
 “ wives and children, for slaves. Be gone ;  
 “ and either bring me money to-morrow morn-  
 “ ing, or every female in your families. I’ll  
 “ make you know that I will be obeyed.”

The wretches went away without daring to expostulate, while their potent lord strutted off, swollen with the thought of having so many of his fellow-creatures subject to his pleasure.

As soon as he entered his castle, he ordered the courier to be brought before him again, and having reprimanded him severely for behaving with such insolence to a person of his importance, dismissed him, now that his own vassals, into whom he meant to strike a terror, were departed. Every thing about him was in character. His castle, which his own people thought one of the grandest palaces in the world, was a mean, incommodious, but indifferently strong place ; the furniture, some of it rich, but old, aukward, and ill-suited, and most of the lesser conveniences of life utterly wanting ; and here was this petty tyrant served with a parade and ostentation, which were a severe though just ridicule upon the pomp and vanity of state.

There was something so new to me in this scene, that I resolved to pursue it farther. I therefore quitted the courier for the company of this *nobleman*, with whom I saw I should have an opportunity of travelling to the court, when he should go to the convention of the states, in equipping his horses, for which grand occasion he spent the rest of the day ; for on them was all his pride displayed,

The

The next morning produced a scene that was a disgrace to the human name. His wretched vassals, in obedience to his dread commands, came with all their mothers, sisters, wives, and daughters, for he had made no exception of age or infirmity, driven before them like a herd of cattle to the market. They also brought all their worldly substance, consisting of the wretched utensils of their houses, their implements of husbandry, and their cattle, to give in the place of their women, if their lord would be graciously pleased to accept of the exchange, and let them starve together.

The cries of the females, and the distress painted in the faces of the men, for they did not dare to complain, are not to be expressed; but neither made any impression on their lord, whose noble heart was above the vulgar weaknesses of humanity. "So! (said he sternly) then you have dared to disobey my commands, and not brought me the money?"

"Mighty lord! (answered an ecclesiastic, who had ventured to come as their intercessor) they have obeyed your commands as far as was in their power, and brought all their women; but money it was impossible for them to bring. The armies, which have marched so often through the country of late, have plundered them of every thing which they might sell to raise money for your use; nor do travellers venture to carry any thing valuable with them in such dangerous times; so that they cannot obtain any that way neither. Have compassion therefore on their distress, and tear not from them their families, the only comfort which they enjoy

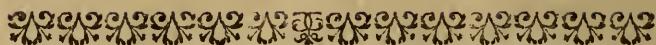
" in



“in life. They have brought all their poor  
 “substance.”——

While the priest was making this pathetic address, the lord was viewing his property, and bargaining for them with some Jewish slave-merchants, whom he had summoned on the occasion, and who are always ready to purchase such unhappy creatures, to sell again to the Turks. “It is in vain for you to speak (said he, when he had concluded his bargain) “whatever I command shall be done; and “since they have neglected to provide money, “their women shall go. This will teach them “to be more diligent another time. They “mind nothing now but dallying with their “wives; but they’ll do better when they are “gone.”——Saying this, he made a signal to the Jews, who drew out the number they had bought, and, paying down their price, drove them away, without the least regard to their cries and distress at this violation of all the tenderest ties of nature.

The horror I felt at this abominable tyranny is not to be expressed; nor the gratitude with which I offered up my thanks to Heaven, for the inestimable happiness of living in a country where I was secure from such outrages against the common rights of mankind. “Too “happy Britons! (said I to myself, in the overflowing of my heart) did you but know your “own happiness! You live under the protection of laws enacted by yourselves; under the “government of a prince who exerts his power “only in acts of benevolence and virtue!”



## C H A P. IV.

*Account of an uncommon kind of council; with  
its natural conclusion.*

WHEN this important affair was finished, the nobleman set out for the convention of the states, with a numerous and grand retinue. The country through which he travelled bore every-where the same appearance with his own territories; the vassals in the most abject slavery and wretchedness, and their tyrants in slovenly profusion, and aukward splendor.

The convention to which the *nobles* were all at this time going, was one of the most glaring instances of human absurdity. It was held in a large plain, where all these petty tyrants met on horse-back, armed, and at the head of their vassals, under the specious pretext of deliberating on the public welfare; but how likely they were to promote it is sufficiently obvious: for if the voice of reason is seldom heard with respect in the best regulated assemblies, and among the most civilized people, where every precaution which human prudence can suggest is taken, to prevent the animosity inseparable from difference of sentiment, from breaking out into acts of violence, what must be expected from a number of men like these, bred up in lawless insolence and outrage, and gathering together without a rule to direct, or power to controul them, prepared to support their own opinions by force  
when

when arguments should fail, let them never be so extravagant and unjust; what, I say, must be expected from such a meeting but tumult, confusion, and slaughter?

This consequence was so well known to their sovereigns, that, although they could not abrogate a custom hallowed by its antiquity, whose sanction too often makes absurdity venerable, and which owed its rise to the most barbarous ignorance, they never would consent to so dangerous and ineffectual an expedient, except in times of public calamity, when their licentious subjects extorted such a concession from them; for the right of convening them was entirely in the sovereign, from whom the supreme power in its utmost latitude was transferred to the collective body of the nobles the moment they met, and for the time of their continuing together; which, however, was always limited to one day, to obviate their abusing their trust.

They assembled accordingly at sun-rise, and separating from their attendants, who stood around them at some little distance, waited for the arrival of their sovereign, to explain to them in form the cause of his summoning them to meet. The time of their waiting was spent in forming cabals, fomenting their mutual discontents, and stimulating each other to sedition, by aggravating every exertion of the royal authority into a breach of their privileges, and an encroachment on the liberty of the public; in behalf of which they declaimed with as much vehemence as if they were resolved to banish tyranny from the face of the earth, and restore all mankind to their original equality.

At length the sovereign appeared in a magnificence almost exceeding imagination; but his looks shewed that grandeur often gilds unhappiness. Advancing into the midst of the assembly, he opened the convention with a most affecting speech, in which he set forth the public distresses in the most lively and pathetic colours; and desired their assistance to remedy them, with as much condescension as was consistent with the dignity of his rank.

But it was far from their intention to comply with any thing he should require: they scarce gave him liberty to finish his speech, when, throwing off all respect and restraint, an hundred mouths opened upon him at once, accusing him of being the cause of all the public calamities, by the weak and pernicious measures of his government; and upbraiding him with tyranny, and a design of overturning the liberties of his subjects, which he had sworn to maintain.

The sovereign, unable to prevent, and, unwilling to hear such indignities, thought proper to retire, and leave them, to pursue their deliberations among themselves, from which he had never expected any advantage, though their clamours had obliged him to call them together. The event was what reason must easily foresee. All was tumult, riot, and confusion. Every one spoke at once; and though in the main they all intended the same thing, which was to dethrone their sovereign, that they might act their ravages with impunity, till another could be elected; their ungoverned heat and impatience defeated their design, and made them fall into the snares of some who  
were



were his friends, who designedly raised a quarrel in which all took part; and in their madness fell to fighting, they knew not for what, nor cared with whom, without a possibility of their being calmed to conclude upon any thing. Their attendants, whom they brought to awe their sovereign, thinking it their duty to assist their lords, joined in the fray, which soon became more horrible than any pitched battle, every one murdering his neighbour without distinction of friend or foe. Night at length separated the survivors, who, without ever enquiring what had been the cause of the quarrel, returned to their respective homes, enflamed with the most virulent animosity against each other, which they wreaked with a fury that aggravated the public calamities a thousand-fold.

The consequence of this constant end of those meetings, and which only could induce the sovereign to submit to the hard expedient of permitting them, was, that it generally delivered him from a great part of his enemies, and diverting the rage of the rest from him for a time, left him at liberty to pursue his own measures, with whatever friends he had been able to attach to him; for all their power ended with the day, they having no right to meet again without a new summons, which such an event gave him just reason to refuse, could they even be reconciled among themselves to require it.

From this horrid scene I went to court, with one of those who had first began the quarrel; and having slipped out of the danger, as soon as he had set them together by the ears, hastened, as soon as all was over, to give an ac-

count of the event to the minister. The pleasure with which the latter received the shocking detail was painful to humanity to behold. He made it be repeated to him over and over, that he might not lose the minutest circumstance, and then went with the pleasing news to his master.

The moment he came into his presence, “I congratulate your majesty (said he, with an air of exultation) on the event of the convention. It has concluded properly in a general broil, in which the greatest part of your enemies have met the fate they deserved.”

High as the triumph of the minister was, he could not communicate his joy to his master. “It is a melancholy case (answered the king, with a deep-drawn sigh) that a sovereign, who ought to be the father of his people, and study only their happiness, should have reason to hear such an horrid account with pleasure.”

“I have often told your majesty, (replied the minister) that this injudicious tenderness was the ruin of your affairs. Had you let your enemy be taken off in the manner I proposed before the war broke out, you would have avoided all the misfortunes which you have experienced since. There is no being any thing by halves. A great man is above the restraints which bind the prejudices of weaker people.”

“Would to Heaven (returned the king) that I had never aspired to that wretched character. All the true happiness of life was in my possession, and I was blessed with a taste to  
“ enjoy

“ enjoy it; but I unhappily mistook the part  
 “ nature had designed me, and aspiring at what  
 “ I could not be, fell from that which I  
 “ was.”

“ Why will your majesty (interrupted the  
 “ minister, with an accent of the most engagi-  
 “ ing tenderness and submissive expostulation)  
 “ torture yourself with these vain reflections?  
 “ Every thing you have done was with the  
 “ best and greatest designs; and if fortune has  
 “ hitherto frowned upon your attempts, the  
 “ fault lies not in you; nor should you be dis-  
 “ couraged by the disappointment. Persever-  
 “ ance conquers the greatest difficulties; and  
 “ one lucky event may yet put you in posses-  
 “ sion of all your hopes. At any rate, it is  
 “ beneath you to retreat now. It would argue a  
 “ dejection more disgraceful than a thousand  
 “ defeats. Resume your spirits therefore, and  
 “ hope for the best. You have many resources  
 “ yet, before it can be necessary for you to  
 “ submit to the dishonour of receiving peace  
 “ from your insulting foe; a foe whose affairs  
 “ have been often in a much more desperate  
 “ situation than your’s, till his resolution re-  
 “ trieved them.”

“ My dear baron! (answered the king,  
 “ somewhat encouraged by this speech) I leave  
 “ every thing to you. I know your attach-  
 “ ment to my interest; I know your abilities,  
 “ and confide in them. Do you what you  
 “ think best; and may Heaven grant you suc-  
 “ cess.”



## C H A P. V.

*Mystery of favouritism. A remarkable instance of the art of making the most of a misfortune.*

THERE was something in the absolute ascendancy which this minister evidently possessed over his sovereign, so contradictory to the natural reason, and spirited sensibility, which marked the looks of the latter, that my curiosity led me to take a view of both their characters, that I might see by what means it had been obtained.

The prince was descending fast into the vale of years. He looked dejected, and melancholy had thrown over his whole appearance a veil of listlessness and diffidence, whose gloom obscured the lustre of his virtues.

Born to the sovereignty of dominions on which nature had bestowed her blessings with a bounteous hand, the first cares of his life had been exerted to improve them by every assistance of industry and art. The success exceeded his most sanguine hopes; encouraged by his smiles genius raised its head in his court, and every finer art flourished in the sunshine of his favour.

So fair a morning promised the brightest day; but ambition soon overcast its radiance, and he forfeited those solid advantages, to grasp at this crown, more dazzling than his own to a superficial view, but far less rich in every real good,



good, without being warned by the fate of his father, who had ship-wrecked his happiness on the same rock.

Adorned with every virtue that dignifies humanity, he seemed designed by Heaven to make his people happy; but the excess even of these virtues produced the contrary effect. He had contracted an intimacy in his earliest youth, when the tender mind receives the strongest impressions, with his present minister, who was placed in an honourable employment about his person by the king his father.

The superiority which a few years advance gives in the beginning of life, generally imprints a respect difficult to be got over ever after. This person was blessed with every qualification which nature could bestow, to improve the advantages of his situation; nor wanted address and care to exert them in their utmost force. He soon attached the infant fondness of his young master by every pleasing art, and, as his reason began, to expand itself, attracted the respect of that also, by displaying his own superiority in the most striking though delicate light.

The talents and disposition of the prince were such as, in the general sense of the world, denominated him rather *good* than *great*; whereas those of his favourite, on the contrary, were all of the other kind, and calculated to make a noise and figure in the highest scenes of life.

In a good mind friendship often arises from the same cause which would have produced envy in one of a different cast. The prince admired the qualities which he was conscious he wanted himself; and as they were never osten-

tationously shewn in opposition to him, soon conceived the strongest esteem for their owner, and resolved to reap the benefit of them, by attaching him to his interest. The other, who soon saw the success of his hopes, omitted nothing that could possibly improve the influence he had acquired. He studied every turn of his temper, and read his inclinations as soon as they arose; so that he was able to anticipate his very wishes.

But the principal thing that established his ascendancy beyond a possibility of being supplanted, was the personal attachment, which he shewed upon every occasion for his master, whose pleasure appeared to be the only object of his attention and regard; and to which he was ready to sacrifice the strongest ties of nature. Of this he had had the good fortune to give an early instance of such a nature, as made reason and passion equally join to confirm his empire over the prince's heart.

He had fallen in love with a most beautiful and accomplished young lady, heiress to one of the richest nobles of the kingdom, and was so happy as to have his passion not only returned by her, but also approved of by her father.

In the overflowing of his heart, on this joyful occasion, he described his intended bride in such rapturous terms to the prince, that he raised his curiosity to see her, when her charms made such an impression upon his heart, naturally susceptible of every warm sensation, that he could not refrain from gazing at her with an earnestness too plain to be misunderstood, though respect restrained them from seeming to take notice of it. Inattentive to the consequence

quence of such an indulgence, the prince repeated his visits so frequently, that the lovers took the alarm, and the feigned sickness, to waive an honour which began to give them pain.

The manner in which he informed the prince of her illness opened his eyes to the nature of it. He took the hint in a proper light; and, as he had never had any particular design in visiting her, found no difficulty in resolving to go no more. But it was easier to form than keep such a resolution. Her beauty had taken too strong possession of his heart to be so easily expelled, and he was actually in love, without having suspected any such thing.

As respect had made the favourite conceal his fears, so delicacy kept the prince in silence also. He resolved to subdue his passion, however difficult the attempt; nor would seem to understand a suspicion that implied a doubt of his generosity. But his behaviour soon betrayed the conflict in his breast. He grew melancholy, sought retirement, and particularly avoided the company of his favourite, whose happiness, though he would not obstruct, he could not think of, without pain.

The other immediately perceived the criticalness of his situation, and was in the highest distress how to act between love and ambition; for he too plainly saw that one must be sacrificed, to secure the other. While he was in this suspense, an unexpected event decided the difficulty.

The king, whose age had not cooled his passion, happened one day to speak warmly in praise of the young lady's beauty; her lover,

who was present, was sufficiently acquainted with his temper, to see the consequence of this. He knew that he had been all his life a professed votary of love, and had never stopped at any thing, however unjustifiable. to gratify his desires. Convinced, therefore, that he must inevitably lose his mistress, his ready genius suggested it to him to dispose of her in such a manner as should turn the loss to his advantage. He instantly waited upon the prince, and throwing himself at his feet, with an air of the most passionate and respectful tenderness, “What (said he) is the cause of this gloom  
 “which hangs upon my prince’s brow? What  
 “uneasiness preys upon his heart, which he  
 “conceals from his faithful and devoted servant?  
 “Say, I conjure you, is there any remedy in my  
 “power to procure? If my life, if any thing  
 “dearer than my life can give you but a moment’s pleasure, speak, and you shall see that  
 “I hold nothing in competition with it.”

The prince was so struck with this unexpected address, that he had no power to make any answer; but his silence sufficiently expressed what the other wanted. “It is so, (continued he, embracing his knees in a well-feigned rapture) my anxious heart divined aright; the charms of *Louisa* have attracted your regard. Take her; and may you both be happy. I resign her to a worthier lover. Let what will be my fate, my happiness shall never interfere with yours.”

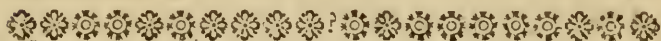
It is impossible to express what the prince felt at such an exalted instance of regard. He raised him from the ground, and embracing him tenderly, “No, my dear baron! (said he,

“as



“ as soon as he could speak ) I cannot, will  
 “ not put your attachment to such a severe  
 “ trial. The very offer you have made is a  
 “ pain to me to hear ; and I were the most un-  
 “ generous of men, should I take advantage of  
 “ it.”

These words, but a few hours before, would have made the baron happy ; but circumstances were altered now, and he was resolved to complete the obligation, by appearing to bestow what he could not keep. He therefore repeated his offer so strongly, that he at length subdued all the prince's scruples, and brought him to a compliance which his heart panted for.



## CHAP. VI.

*Continued. A mirror for the female mind. Fear and resentment triumphant over love and virtue.*

**B**UT this was much the easiest part of his undertaking. The prince's inclinations assisted his arguments, but his mistress's were on the opposite side. She really loved him, and had beside so high a sense of honour and virtue, that it seemed in vain to attempt persuading her to take a step so contrary to her principles, and so destructive to her passion. But he was not to be discouraged by difficulties. He had conquered his own love, and his opinion of female constancy was not so high as to make him despair of the same success with her ; though he judged that some address might

be necessary to save appearances. He went to her, therefore, directly, when he left the prince, and putting on an air of the deepest distress, on her inquiring tenderly what ailed him, burst into a flood of tears, and turned from her; the regret which he really felt at the thought of losing her assisting his design.

Struck with such strange behaviour, she eagerly asked him what could be the matter? when, looking wishfully in her face for some moments, “O Louisa! (said he) must I lose you? Why have I not power to support my right against the lawless invasions of tyranny?”

“Good Heaven! (exclaimed she, terrified and amazed) What can you mean? What tyrant invades your right? Or, who should take me from you?”

“And have you not heard of it then? (said he) Has not the mandate yet arrived, that is to tear you for ever from my arms? Give orders to be denied to every one, even to the king. Let them say you are sick, confined to your bed; or any thing, to prevent your being seen. I must leave you now; but I will return, privately, in half an hour, when it will be dark, and unfold the whole of our misfortunes to you.”——Saying this, he left her abruptly, with all the appearance of distraction and despair.

The astonishment and terror with which this struck the lady, may be easily conceived. She instantly gave the orders he desired, and withdrew to her chamber, where she waited for his return, with the most anxious impatience. At length he came; and, being admitted with every alarming circumstance of cau-

tion

tion and fear, after some most passionate exclamations at the severity of his fate, he acquainted her of the king's having unhappily taken a liking to her ; the consequence of which was, that he would certainly enjoy her either by persuasion or force.

The character of the king made such a story too probable, especially as a woman wants but little proof of the power of her beauty. She seemed astonished at the news, and expressed the strongest concern ; but vanity glistened through her grief, and the many and particular questions which she asked betrayed a levity at least, which lessened her in her lover's eyes.

As soon as she had recovered herself, however, from the first emotions of her surprize, she asked if there was no way of escaping such a misfortune ? and even proposed an immediate marriage, to prevent it ; but he replied, that such a rash expedient would only provoke the king's resentment to his ruin, without being any protection to her, as he had shewed on many occasions, that he made light even of that sacred tie, when it interfered with his pleasures.

When he had let her dwell upon her fears for some time, which he still heightened by new circumstances of danger, from the capricious and cruel temper of the king, whose fatal effects, the objects he was one moment fondest of often felt the next, the least violent of which was to be immured for life in a convent, he at length answered to her repeated intreaties of devising some way for her to escape such a misfortune, that he knew but

of one which would prevent the king's designs; but at the same time would be equally destructive to his own hopes.

“O name it! (said she eagerly, terrified to death at the thought of a convent) Name any thing that will save me from him; and Heaven will inspire us with some means for acquiring every thing else afterwards.”

“The prince (answered he with a sigh) the prince alone can save you from him.”

“Why do you hesitate then to apply to him? (interrupted she eagerly) his friendship, his goodness will do any thing.”

“Say rather his love; (replied he) for that alone can do it.”

——“His love! I understand you not.”

——“Nothing but the love of the son can save you from that of the father. You must instantly resolve, therefore, which you will accept of. The king wastes no time in courtship. He will apply directly to your father, and tempt his ambition with some gilded bait; or, if that should not prevail, what subject can resist a monarch's power? The ministers of his pleasures may be this moment at the gate.”

——“Direct me Heaven! Is there no other way, no other method of avoiding this dreadful alternative? Beside, the prince—he has never declared. What shall I, can I do? No! I will die first. Let us this instant fly this hated place. It were better to live in a desert, than under subjection to such tyranny.”

——“O my Louisa! it were happiness to live any where with you; but, alas! whither  
“could



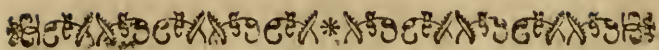
“ could we fly to escape his power? We should  
 “ only heap tenfold ruin on our heads by such  
 “ an attempt. No! since I cannot be blessed  
 “ with you myself, let me consult your happi-  
 “ ness. The prince loves you, passionately  
 “ loves you. His eyes, his whole behaviour  
 “ has long since declared it. He is generous,  
 “ tender, and constant; and with him I shall  
 “ at least have the consolation of seeing you  
 “ happy: consider the difference between being  
 “ dragged away by violence to the loathsome  
 “ bed of an old imperious tyrant, . . . and re-  
 “ lease to be expected from which is to be  
 “ locked up for ever in a convent; and yield-  
 “ ing to a young and amiable prince, whose  
 “ heart doats on you.”—— Then seeing that  
 her resolution began to waver, “ I will go  
 “ (continued he) this instant, and resign my  
 “ pretensions to him; and make him believe  
 “ that I sacrifice to his favour what is the ef-  
 “ fect of irresistible necessity; for he knows  
 “ not of his father’s intentions. Do you, O  
 “ Louisa! imitate my example, and, appearing  
 “ ignorant of our misfortune, yield as if from  
 “ inclination. It will enhance the favour,  
 “ and establish his love on the solid basis of  
 “ esteem. I’ll go this instant and send him  
 “ to you. A moment’s pause for thought  
 “ would lead me into madness and despair.  
 “ Take care to be denied by every-one but  
 “ him.”

The situation in which he left her is hard  
 to be described: Her love for the baron, her  
 principles of honour and virtue, all resisted the  
 complying with the prince; but, on the oppo-  
 site hand, there was no other way of escaping  
 from

from his father ; and the baron's making the propofal raifed a resentment that almoft balanced her paffion for him ; for ſhe would have had him meet ruin rather than think of parting with her.

In this diftreſs, ſhe formed a thouſand different reſolutions ; but was ſtill unrefolved till the arrival of the prince decided the conflict ; when the reluctance with which ſhe yielded confirmed him in the opinion of her love for the baron, and conſequently of the greatneſs of the ſacrifice he had made to him, to prevent the leſſening the merit of which, by a diſcovery of the motive, the latter took care to make the prince's amour immediately public ; which prevented the king's taking any farther notice of her.

This affair, which in the beginning threatened to ruin the baron in the prince's favour, by this prudent management ſecured it to him for ever. He thought it impoſſible that a man, who had made ſuch a ſacrifice to him, ſhould not be as faithful to his intereſt in every inſtance ; and the king, his father, ſoon after dying, he reſigned the reins of government abſolutely into his hands.



## C H A P. VII.

*Mystery of favouritism concluded. The necessary effects of ridicule. Ministerial use of unlimited power; with the natural consequence of ill-placed confidence.*

THE first use which the new minister made of his power was, to traverse the measures, and remove all the ministers of the late king. To reconcile his master to a step so contrary to the natural mildness and benevolence of his temper, he had long taken every occasion to decry the understanding of the late king, and turn all his ways into ridicule. Every man has peculiarities which will not bear to be shewn separately, and in an unfavourable light. Not considering that he was guilty of many, equally inconsistent, and reprehensible, the young king had insensibly accustomed himself to find fault with, and deride the oddities and foibles of his father, which his favourite was never weary of displaying in the most ludicrous light.

The sting of ridicule is always poisoned. Though the wound it marks is at first so slight as even to be over-looked, the deadly venom soon spreads through the whole body, and infects the most distant parts. From laughing at the late king's foibles, the transition was easy to hold his most serious measures in contempt. He that was a fool in one thing, could not be wise in any; nor were the servants, who  
could

could prostitute themselves so far as to minister to his folly, worthy of trust from a wiser master.

The court immediately assumed a new appearance. Every office of honour and profit was filled with the minister's creatures; while the king, who saw only with his favourite's eyes, looked so coldly on all who disdained to enter themselves into that ignominious list, that they forebore coming into his presence, where they were sure of being insulted by those whom but a little before they would have scorned even to speak to; and left him invironed with a mercenary band, joined by their common interest in a confederacy, to keep honour, truth, and justice at a distance from the throne.

In the mean time, the minister was not at a loss how to maintain the influence he had acquired. He flattered the king's taste for pleasure and magnificence, and diverted his attention from every thing that looked like business; embarrassing with innumerable difficulties every motion which he did not immediately suggest himself; while he contrived so, as that all his own schemes met the readiest success.

The importance which this management gave him, with a prince naturally indolent and voluptuous, is obvious. Sure to be gratified in every thing he liked, he thought himself happy in having one upon whom he could so entirely depend, to ease him of the cares and fatigues of government. Not that his minister presumed to obtrude his opinions directly, or seem to dictate to his master; on the contrary, he insinuated his sentiments with such delicacy and address, that the king mistook them for his



own, and imagined he governed the man who directed his very thoughts.

But this happiness was far from being solid. The affections of the nobles, who were the real ornaments and support of the throne, were alienated from their sovereign, by a partiality equally injudicious and disgraceful; and the people, who saw the taxes under which they groaned, and which were more than they were able to bear, lavished upon an insolent favourite and his greedy followers, swelled with discontent and indignation, which threatened to burst in a storm that should shake the throne; while the minister, as if he was impatient for his fate, lived in a magnificence that exceeded even that of his sovereign, and was an insult to their misery.

Nor did he stop here. Scorning to have the effects of his power confined within his master's dominions, he madly involved himself in the intrigues of the neighbouring princes, and entered unprepared into a war in which he had no concern. The consequence was what reason might have foreseen. His sovereign was driven from his capital, his country was laid waste, his cities plundered; his palaces, on which he had expended so much care and cost, spoiled of all their magnificence and riches, and his subjects compelled to serve in the armies of his enemies; and, to compleat his misfortunes, his reception from those to whom he fled for refuge, cold and insolent to such a degree as gave him too just reason to apprehend their proceeding to actual rebellion, and tearing the crown from his head. Yet amid all this ruin, though evidently the consequence of his

his favourite's counsels, the latter still preserved his ascendancy by the same flattery which first acquired it, and made him persist in his wild schemes, chusing that he should plunge into the gulph to the brink of which he had brought him, rather than enter into measures of accommodation, in the course of which his eyes might be opened, and his indignation raised to deliver himself from such a state of slavery, and take the reins of government out of such unworthy hands.

“Unhappy is the people (said I to myself, “shocked at so gross an infatuation) whose “king is governed by a favourite! Unhappy “is the king who lets another stand between “him and his people; who sees not with his “own eyes, nor is able to redress their grievances, and reward their merits from his own “experience; but, besieged by a set of sycophants whose aim is to deceive him, is kept “in a state of darkness and delusion, till he is “awoke from his dream of happiness by the “stroke of ruin.”

I was diverted from these reflections by the entrance of the minister to his sovereign. “I “congratulate your majesty (said he, with an “air of exultation) on the most fortunate event “that could have happened. The king of “*Spain* has at length declared for our allies. “The wealth and power of that mighty kingdom will overwhelm those haughty Islanders, “and oblige them to withhold the assistance “which has hitherto supported the enemy; so “that you are now delivered from the disgraceful necessity of accepting terms from “him.”

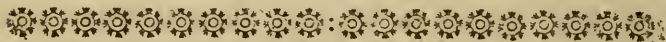
“ Is it possible (answered the king) that he  
 “ can have been prevailed upon to break a  
 “ neutrality which has been so advantageous  
 “ to him? Who has been able to make him  
 “ take such a step? Or what motives can have  
 “ urged him to intrude himself, as I may say,  
 “ into a war in which he may lose much, and  
 “ can gain nothing?”

“ The motives, replied the minister, which  
 “ should influence every sovereign. A gene-  
 “ rous indignation to see the different branches  
 “ of his own family oppressed; and a prudent  
 “ care to stop the progress of their enemies in  
 “ time, before their power should become so  
 “ great as to be dangerous to all their neigh-  
 “ bours. All will go now as we wish. Your  
 “ majesty’s enemies will be humbled in the  
 “ dust; and you will return to your capital in  
 “ triumph, strengthened by your victorious al-  
 “ lies, to subdue this rebellious kingdom also,  
 “ and make it hereditary in your family. Will  
 “ your majesty honour me with your presence  
 “ this evening, at an entertainment which I  
 “ design on this happy occasion. I have some-  
 “ thing to shew you that will give you plea-  
 “ sure. The painter and statuary whom I sent  
 “ to Italy are returned, and have brought some  
 “ of the most curious and valuable remains of  
 “ antiquity in their several arts. There is one  
 “ in particular most remarkably fine. It is a  
 “ statue of *good fortune*, dedicated by *Marius* on  
 “ his last triumphant return to Rome, from  
 “ whence he had been driven by his enemies.  
 “ I was just looking at it when this account  
 “ from Spain arrived, and own that I was af-  
 “ fected with so striking a circumstance.”

“ I

“ I wish it may prove an happy omen ; (answered the king, somewhat elated at the news, and still more pleased with the account of the arrival of the painter and statuary) but we must hope the best. What is it o’clock ? I’ll go directly. I have a mind to see your new acquisition, and ask those people some questions about *Herculaneum*.”

Such an infatuation was too gross. I could bear it no longer ; but turned away, sick at heart, from the mortifying sight.



## C H A P. VIII.

*The scene changed. A national character. Another great man. Curious account of an inn, with an entertainment of political puffs.*

THE motives which the minister had alleged for the king of Spain’s entering into the war, wore such an appearance of plausibility, that I resolved to visit his court, that I might see if all his measures were conducted with equal prudence and spirit.

I had seen enough of the country in which I was, to satisfy my curiosity ; nor did I desire to travel again through the scenes of military glory, exhibited by those around it. I therefore *wished* myself directly into Spain, but at more distance from the court, that I might have an opportunity of observing the manners of the people, which, I apprehended, seldom appear in their genuine colours there.

The



The first thing that struck me, on my arrival, was the poverty in which the middle and lower ranks of the people lived. The real wants of nature are very few; but the conveniencies which human ingenuity has discovered to make life more agreeable, (I speak not of the vitiated cravings of luxury) and which custom has made almost indispensable, comprehend a wider circle. Of these they were in a manner as utterly destitute, as if they were incapable of the arts which could procure them.

The compassion, which such a state of wretchedness must naturally raise, was soon turned into contempt, when it appeared to proceed wholly from themselves. The face of the country shewed that nature had most amply done her part to make the inhabitants happy; but every assistance of their own was wanting: and after a long and profound peace, the defects of idleness equalled the ravages of war in other countries. The lands were uncultivated, the cities in ruins, and the people wretched. Yet, amid all this, a pride peculiar to themselves appeared in every word and action, that made their misery ridiculous; but then at the same time it also enabled them to bear it, by diverting their attention from their distresses to their imaginary importance. They looked upon themselves as superior to the rest of mankind; and in consequence of this opinion submitted without repining to the severest wants, rather than debase their dignity by the exercise of any industry or art.

While

While I was making these remarks, I happened to take notice of two men, from whose conversation I learned that they were going to court. They were Frenchmen, and by their equipage and dress appeared to be persons of distinction; but I directly saw through their disguise, that they were ecclesiastics of the order of the Jesuits, who concealed their character for a special purpose. My opinion of those religious made me attach myself to them without hesitation, as the best guides I could possibly have.

When I joined them, they were entering the yard of an inn to which they had been directed as the best in the town. At the door of it sat a man who appeared to be in the vigour of life, healthy, strong, and formed for any kind of exercise or labour. Though the day was uncommonly hot, he was wrapped close in his cloak, with one leg thrown carelessly over the other knee, and his elbow rested on a heap of stones, which seemed to have been piled up as a buttress, to support the wall of the house, while he lolled back, lost in the contemplation of his own consequence.

As the travellers advanced to the door, one of their servants called aloud. The Don, without deigning to move a limb, or discompose the gravity of a single feature, having eyed him for some time, vouchsafed to ask him what he wanted. "We want (answered the elder of the two gentlemen) some body to take our horses, and shew us into the house."

"Yonder is the stable (replied the Spaniard, pointing to an hovel half of which was tum-  
bled

“bled down and the rest ready to follow,) you  
 “may put your horses there, and by that time  
 “the people of the house may be at leisure to  
 “come to you.”

“At leisure! (returned the gentleman im-  
 “patiently) is not this an inn?” Then calling  
 “again, an old woman half naked came out,  
 “and going to take his horse; “What, woman,  
 “(continued he, vexed at being kept broiling  
 “so long in the heat) is there no other servant  
 “beside you? Where is the master of the  
 “house?”

“Here I am (answered the Don, rising de-  
 “liberately and adjusting his whiskers) what  
 “is your business with me? I suppose you do  
 “not expect that I should wait upon you?”

“By no means, sir, (said the other, who  
 “did not desire any altercation with such an  
 “adversary;) I only want to have some of  
 “your servants called.”

“It is very well; (answered the Host) the  
 “woman will put your horses in the stable; and  
 “you may follow me into the house.”

The travellers, who directly saw into their  
 host's character, thought proper to accept his  
 polite invitation; and attended him into a room,  
 the furniture of which consisted of two or three  
 broken stools and an old table; but the very  
 wretchedness of it proved at this time a con-  
 venience; the cracks in the walls drawing an  
 air on every side, that was the best refreshment  
 they seemed likely to find in such a place.

When they were seated, the gentlemen  
 turned to their host, who had not waited for an  
 invitation to sit down with them, and asked  
 him what they could have for dinner. “Sir,

“ (answered the other) the house is plentifully  
 “ provided with every thing, as my wife will  
 “ inform you when she comes; I mind not  
 “ these matters.” Then stroaking down his  
 whiskers, with great solemnity; “ Pray, gen-  
 “ tlemen (continued he) what news is there? I  
 “ hear the wrath of the king is kindled against  
 “ the English; and that he is determined to  
 “ extirpate their whole nation: It is a glori-  
 “ ous resolution, and worthy of his power and  
 “ magnanimity. I only wonder, why he has  
 “ suffered them upon the earth so long.”

As he said this, the mistress of the house  
 entered; and after the customary cant of being  
 exhausted by an extraordinary run of company  
 of late, confessed that all her house afforded  
 was some bacon and eggs. “ For, (said she)  
 “ this unlucky war has ruined us all. We  
 “ used to have fish fit to entertain an Abbot,  
 “ and flour that made bread white enough for  
 “ the king’s table; but now we have nothing  
 “ at all. They pretend indeed to comfort us,  
 “ with leave from the pope to eat flesh; but  
 “ they do not tell us where we shall get  
 “ it. I wish those who advised his majesty  
 “ to this war, may be the first who perish in  
 “ it.”

“ Silence, woman, and mind your own af-  
 “ fairs! (interrupted the husband, with a tone  
 “ of authority) how should you know any  
 “ thing of peace or war? Leave those mat-  
 “ ters to us, who understand them.”

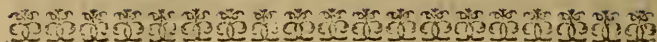
His wife obeyed the sovereign mandate with-  
 out reply, and retired; when he, swelling with  
 double importance from such a triumph,  
 “ When we have subdued these English (con-  
 tinued



tinued he, addressing himself to his guests) “we  
 “ shall be better supplied with those things,  
 “ and many others than ever. They will be  
 “ obliged to bring them to us as tribute, not  
 “ for sale; and to perform for us all the servile  
 “ offices of trade, which it would be a disho-  
 “ nour to a Spaniard to defile his hands with.  
 “ Our slaves in America work better than  
 “ when they had their liberty. Beside, they  
 “ are heretics; and it is a sin, as well as a dis-  
 “ grace, to be at peace with such. Our cu-  
 “ rate preached us an excellent sermon to this  
 “ effect, last Sunday; when, among other  
 “ things, he told us, that all the catholic  
 “ powers had at length agreed to join and root  
 “ them out. It is a glorious and a pious  
 “ undertaking. Since the holy wars there has  
 “ been nothing like it.”

As their sumptuous fare required not much  
 time for preparation, the entrance of it inter-  
 rupted this magnanimous politician here, at  
 which he seemed not better pleased than the  
 travellers were with their entertainment.

While they were refreshing themselves as  
 well as they could, I took the opportunity of  
 going to see the town, the inhabitants of which  
 I found most exactly characterized by the inn-  
 keeper and his wife; all those who applied to  
 any kind of industry repining, like her, at the  
 war; and the drones of society, who starve in  
 idleness, vapouring with him of conquest and  
 glory.



## C H A P. IX.

*Wheels within wheels. Certain great transactions deduced from unsuspected causes; with the advantage of having two strings to a bow.*

AS soon as the heat of the day was abated, the travellers continued their journey, when the elder addressing himself to his companion, “ You seemed surprised (said he) at the odd composition of our host; but a little acquaintance with these people will make it familiar to you. Pride and poverty are the characteristics of this nation, not only in his low sphere, but also in the very policy and government of it, in which they maintain a struggle that makes them justly held in contempt by the rest of the world.”

“ If that is the case, (answered the other) I am the less surprised at their entering thus madly into a war, for which they appear to be so ill-provided; though, I own, the caution with which they avoided it so long gave me a better opinion of them; and I should be glad to know what motives induced them to alter a conduct which they seemed to understand the advantages of so well.”

“ The measures by which most of the nations in the world are governed (replied the former) are so inconsistent not only with reason and justice, but even with themselves, each day producing a new system contradictory to the last, that you must not expect a  
“ satis-

“satisfactory account of them. As an instance  
 “of this, the motives of the Spaniards for en-  
 “tering into this war are hidden, even from  
 “the persons who think they are the authors  
 “of it; and who, unknown to themselves,  
 “are serving a cause which they had rather  
 “ruin.

“It may be necessary to explain this to you.  
 “The jealousy which the power of our order  
 “has for some time raised in the very courts  
 “whose favour principally exalted it to that  
 “power, has at length burst upon us in a  
 “storm, not to be resisted in Portugal, and  
 “threatened not much less in France. To  
 “avert this misfortune required the utmost ad-  
 “dress. Our influence in Spain, though ra-  
 “ther in decline, is still considerable. This  
 “we obliquely proposed to the French mini-  
 “stry, to exert in their behalf, to bring the  
 “Spaniards to assist them in a war under which  
 “they were ready to sink, on condition of their  
 “protecting us from any farther disturbance in  
 “France; which they accordingly have pro-  
 “mised.

“The lure, which we held up to the Spa-  
 “niards, to draw them into a measure so con-  
 “trary to their interest, was the crown of Por-  
 “tugal. We know, by experience, that it  
 “was not possible to make the court of Lisbon  
 “break with the English. We therefore first  
 “inflamed the ambition of the Spanish mini-  
 “stry, by blazoning their king’s claim to the  
 “Portuguese throne in the strongest colours;  
 “and persuading them that this was the pro-  
 “per opportunity for asserting it, when the  
 “hearts of the people were alienated from their

“ sovereign by the disasters of his reign, and  
“ the English so taken up with the wars in  
“ which they were already engaged, that they  
“ could afford him no protection, though he  
“ was so bigotted to their alliance, that he  
“ would certainly give a colourable pretence  
“ for attacking him, by refusing to enter into  
“ the confederacy against them. Our scheme  
“ was successful. The Spaniards, without  
“ considering farther, broke with the English,  
“ and we obtained the protection, for a time  
“ at least, which we desired in France.

“ But this was not our only motive for urg-  
“ ing this court to take these measures. The  
“ wound we have received from Portugal is  
“ not to be forgiven, nor to be healed but by  
“ the ruin of that monarchy. If the Spaniards  
“ should be able to establish the claim which  
“ we have spirited them up to assert, our re-  
“ venge will be amply gratified; though could  
“ we even foresee the contrary, that would make  
“ no alteration in our measures. The war it-  
“ self, be the event what it will, must in some  
“ degree wreak our vengeance, and be of far-  
“ ther service to us, by diverting to other ob-  
“ jects an attention that boded unfavourably  
“ to our hopes.

“ Weighty as these reasons were, we had  
“ others still of greater importance, which we  
“ pursued with a policy so deep as to defy de-  
“ tection. You know that the great object of  
“ our attention has long been to establish an  
“ independency in some part of the world.  
“ A thorough knowledge of the present cir-  
“ cumstances of Europe convinced us, that we  
“ must not think of such a thing there. We  
“ there-



“ therefore naturally turned our eyes to Ame-  
 “ rica, where the weakness of the possessing  
 “ powers was a temptation as strong as the  
 “ riches and fertility of their possessions. By  
 “ both these the dominions of Portugal were  
 “ from the beginning marked out for our at-  
 “ tempt; to give success to which we have,  
 “ for near half a century, been labouring to  
 “ make that crown break with England. In  
 “ that case, we should have immediately join-  
 “ ed with the latter, and, by giving them a  
 “ share of the spoil, gained the assistance of  
 “ their naval force, to execute our designs.  
 “ But the Portuguese were too wary, and for  
 “ once understood their own interests too well  
 “ to go so far, though we absolutely led them,  
 “ in many instances, to act in such a manner  
 “ to the English, as would have drawn the  
 “ resentment of a people less prudent upon  
 “ them.

“ Being disappointed in this our first scheme,  
 “ all that remained for us to do was, to make  
 “ the like attempt upon the Spaniards, against  
 “ whom we intended to turn the same wea-  
 “ pons at a proper time; and doubt not but,  
 “ by the help of the English, we shall be able  
 “ to accomplish our design of erecting an em-  
 “ pire in some part of their American domi-  
 “ nions, while they are pursuing the chimeri-  
 “ cal claim we have set them upon here, and  
 “ wreaking our revenge upon Portugal. As  
 “ to the equity of these measures, that never  
 “ comes into question till after the event. If  
 “ they are successful, no one will deny it; if  
 “ not, they will be condemned, though dic-  
 “ tated by the voice of Heaven. Thus you see

“ that, at any rate, the war must answer some  
 “ of our purposes, at the same time that we  
 “ do not appear to be in the least concerned  
 “ in it.”

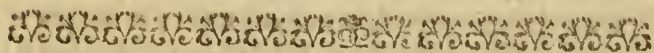
“ I am much obliged to you for this ac-  
 “ count, (said the younger) which sufficiently  
 “ explains the motives of your engaging so  
 “ warmly in matters apparently so little inte-  
 “ resting to you. I should be glad also to know  
 “ by what arguments you can have persuaded  
 “ the court of Spain into measures evidently so  
 “ contrary to their interest. The voice of the  
 “ people, who seldom judge wrong, is loud  
 “ against the war.”

“ Gold, my friend ! (answered the other)  
 “ Gold, the great persuasive of the world, was  
 “ the argument we made use of. This was  
 “ the weight which set the main spring of the  
 “ machine in motion. The specious pretexts  
 “ indeed that covered it were prudence and ho-  
 “ nour, which a proper application to their  
 “ natural vanity made the croud receive with-  
 “ out examination ; not to omit religious pre-  
 “ judice, that absolute tyrant of weak minds.

“ We persuaded them, that it was a dero-  
 “ gation from their honour to see a prince, so  
 “ nearly allied to their mighty monarch as the  
 “ king of France, distressed in such a manner ;  
 “ that his conquerors, if not stopped in time,  
 “ would fall upon them next ; and that it was  
 “ serving the cause of God, to attack heretics.  
 “ By these various arguments we have gained  
 “ our great point of making them break with  
 “ the English ; but our trouble ended not there.  
 “ It will require equal address, and infinitely  
 “ more pains, to keep up their spirits, and pre-  
 “ vent

“vent their quitting it as poorly, as they undertook it rashly. This is the occasion of my coming here at this time; and as the bright abilities you are known to possess, and the strong attachment you have to our cause, have made the whole order expect the greatest things from you, I chose you for my companion and associate, and have given you this general view of the present state of affairs here, to direct your own observations in the course of our most delicate and difficult negotiations, and enable you to act in case any thing should happen to me.”

This account, which I have here thrown together, was the substance of several different conversations, during their journey to Madrid.



## CHAP. X.

*More great matters. Home truths. A character out of nature; with a new definition of the laws of war; and a certain method of reducing a nation to obedience.*

THE morning after they arrived, the elder went to wait upon the first minister. The silence and solemnity which reigned through the whole court struck me with respect. “Certainly, (thought I) the Jesuit must have misrepresented these people. Instead of the hurry, noise, and giddy bustle, so offensive in other courts, every thing here bears that

“ appearance of seriousness, which is the shadow of wisdom.”

The first sight of the minister confirmed me in this opinion. He was dressed in black cloaths, whose hue added a gloom of additional gravity to his whole appearance. By his looks and motions, his soul seemed to be wrapped in the most intense thought. His eyes were fixed; his features all strained to the strongest attention, and his steps slow and stately.

When the ceremonials of address were performed with proper punctuality, and the attendants dismissed, the Jesuit entered directly upon business. “ I am come (said he) according to your excellency’s desire, to settle every thing that may have been omitted, and conclude the treaty; for which purpose I have brought the proper powers from his majesty my master; who has also honoured me with the pleasing office of delivering to you some particular tokens of his esteem.”

“ I am obliged to his majesty; (answered the Don, with an air of more than ministerial importance) he does me justice in believing that my inclinations are to serve him; tho’ what I have undertaken is really most difficult, if not dangerous. We have declared war as you desired; but how we are to carry it on is hard to say. Our magazines are empty, our troops not half compleat, and even these undisciplined and badly provided; and our marine, far from being in a condition to cope with that of the enemy; so that really I am almost afraid to look forward to the consequences.”

“ Your



“ Your excellency will pardon me for saying  
 “ (replied the Jesuit) that your apprehensions  
 “ are too ready; you have money, and that  
 “ will soon procure every necessary of war.  
 “ The wealth of our enemies alone overpowers  
 “ us; but with the addition of yours we shall  
 “ be as much too powerful for them. You  
 “ will have the honour of serving us in so cri-  
 “ tical a conjuncture; nor is there any danger  
 “ in the attempt. They are tired of the war,  
 “ and want a pretence for making peace, as  
 “ much as we want a peace itself. The in-  
 “ constancy of their temper, never long plea-  
 “ sed with any thing, is surfeited with suc-  
 “ cesses. To take the advantage of this humour,  
 “ our emissaries have set their ministers toge-  
 “ ther by the ears in such a manner, that they  
 “ think of nothing but supplanting each other;  
 “ to effect which they would willingly sacrifice  
 “ every interest of their country.

“ Of this I can give you an instance, that  
 “ will remove every doubt. Their king having  
 “ lately thought proper to change his ministry,  
 “ those who were turned out, from a spirit of  
 “ resentment, move heaven and hell to blacken  
 “ the characters and decry the abilities of their  
 “ successors; and, as disgrace with the prince  
 “ is the sure means of favour with the people,  
 “ exert their popularity with the utmost licen-  
 “ tious boldness to make them distrusted, and  
 “ defeat their measures, chusing to undo all  
 “ their own work, and lose every advantage  
 “ gained by the war, rather than their rivals  
 “ should have the honour of bringing it to an  
 “ happy conclusion; while the latter, with  
 “ equal judgment, think it necessary for them

“ to retort the abuse, and act directly contrary  
 “ to the system of the others, as it were in  
 “ justification of their removal ; as if a king  
 “ were the only master who had not a right to  
 “ change his servants when he pleased ; and  
 “ thus, while this altercation goes on, the  
 “ business of the nation stands still.

“ Advantageous as this is to us, it is not the  
 “ only good effect we promise ourselves from  
 “ these disputes. The old ministry, who pur-  
 “ sued the war so obstinately while they had  
 “ the management of it themselves, will, by  
 “ this indiscriminate opposition to all the mea-  
 “ sures of the new, force them into a peace on  
 “ any terms, to preserve their power ; for how-  
 “ ever finely it may sound in speculation, a  
 “ minister who will sacrifice his own ambition  
 “ to the interest of his country, and resign his  
 “ power to his rival rather than have the bu-  
 “ siness suffer by a competition for it, is a cha-  
 “ racter if not absolutely out of nature, yet so  
 “ rarely to be found, that there is no necessity  
 “ to guard against it ; so that both parties  
 “ equally serve our interest, by their animosity  
 “ against each other.

“ From this plain state of the matter, you  
 “ may see that you run no hazard in joining  
 “ with us, as a peace must necessarily and  
 “ speedily be the consequence of the measures  
 “ we have taken ; and whatever expence you  
 “ may be at, will be amply paid by the con-  
 “ quest of Portugal, which you will never  
 “ have such another opportunity of annexing  
 “ to the crown of Spain, if you miss this :  
 “ besides that so close a connection between  
 “ your court and ours, will henceforward

“ en-

“enable them to give law to the rest of  
 “Europe, and yours in particular, at a proper  
 “opportunity to recover the many parts of  
 “your dominions which have been torn from  
 “them, in the former division of our in-  
 “terests.”

“According to your reasoning then (said  
 “the Spaniard) there is no necessity for our  
 “making any extraordinary efforts but in  
 “Portugal; which I am very glad of, as we  
 “were never so unprepared.”

“No! (answered the Jesuit) nothing ex-  
 “traordinary; or that can be attended with  
 “inconvenience is necessary. But still, some-  
 “thing must be done, if only to save appear-  
 “ances. Your laying siege to Gibraltar——”

“Gibraltar! (interrupted the minister) that  
 “is impossible! absolutely impossible! We are  
 “as well able to besiege the whole island of  
 “Britain, as Gibraltar. We have no provi-  
 “sions made which could give the least hope  
 “of success to such an attempt.”

“Your excellency is too precipitate; (an-  
 “swered the jesuit.) Success! If by success you  
 “mean taking it, I never thought of any such  
 “thing. No! All we propose is to raise a  
 “ferment in England, and give their ministry  
 “an excuse for making a peace. We are suf-  
 “ficiently sensible that it cannot be taken.”

“But if we should make this feint, (replied  
 “the minister) do you really think the English  
 “will ever suffer us to conquer Portugal?  
 “They are bound, by interest as well as ho-  
 “nour, to defend it.”

“I grant they are, (returned the jesuit) but  
 “that signifies nothing. Set but their mini-

“stry to wrangling among themselves, and  
 “you may bring them into any thing.  
 “Their desertion of the Catalans, on a simi-  
 “lar occasion, is an instance of what the  
 “Portuguese may expect by depending on  
 “them.”

“Why, indeed, that is an encouragement,  
 “(said the other) and therefore we will do all  
 “we can to be ready to take the advantage of  
 “it.”

“I am glad to find that affairs go on so well  
 “in Portugal, (said the jesuit) the people, as  
 “I travelled through the kingdom, are full of  
 “spirits at the good news; and every one eager  
 “to have a share in the conquest.”

“Yes! (answered the minister) if they could  
 “get it by vapouring at home. As to the  
 “good news, it is necessary to propagate such,  
 “to amuse the populace; but, in reality, our  
 “troops advance but very slowly, and meet  
 “difficulties every day, which we did not fore-  
 “see. If the assistance promised us by your  
 “court does not arrive before the English join  
 “the enemy——”

“Assistance! (interrupted the jesuit) Never  
 “let it be said that the mighty monarch of  
 “Spain wanted assistance to over-run the lit-  
 “tle kingdom of Portugal. It would be an  
 “indelible disgrace to your honour to accept  
 “assistance. As to the English, I have told  
 “you already how they will be taken off; and  
 “then you will have the Portuguese entirely at  
 “your mercy. But has your excellency con-  
 “sidered of the advice I took the liberty to  
 “hint to you, of extirpating the present race  
 “of inhabitants by every severity authorized  
 “by



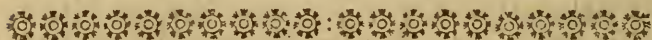
“ by the laws of war, that is, by every method  
 “ which the conquerors please to make use of.  
 “ Their hatred to your nation is such, that it  
 “ is impossible ever to reduce them to a proper  
 “ degree of subjection and loyalty. Above all  
 “ things, there should not be one of the race  
 “ of the present king or even of the nobility  
 “ left, as experience shews that they will  
 “ watch every opportunity to revolt, and  
 “ assert an independency, in the same man-  
 “ ner as this family gained the crown by re-  
 “ bellion.”

“ What you say (answered the minister)  
 “ agrees entirely with my own opinion. I had  
 “ resolved upon this from the first moment I  
 “ thought upon the war: I am just now going  
 “ to attend the king, and, as matters of such  
 “ consequence cannot be conducted with too  
 “ much caution, will obtain an order express-  
 “ ly to that purpose, under his own hand, to  
 “ the general of his forces, to vindicate me  
 “ from the odium of such an unpopular mea-  
 “ sure. His natural turn is to cruelty, so that  
 “ he will most gladly take the hint. In the  
 “ mean time, you may assure his majesty of  
 “ France of every service in my power, to  
 “ humble his haughty enemy, and procure him  
 “ the peace he desires.”

Satisfied with the success of his negociation,  
 the jesuit then withdrew, and the minister com-  
 posed his countenance into proper gravity, to  
 appear in public.

The natural pride and ostentation of the  
 Spaniards at first made me something surprised  
 at the freedom and candour with which the  
 minister confessed the weakness and wants of  
 the

the Spanish government: but a moment's reflection explained his conduct, and shewed that he acted with the strictest consistency of character. He had suffered himself to be gained by bribery, to serve the interests of France, and therefore could not pretend to assume a consequence, or make a vain parade of power which he could not exert, to the very agent who had corrupted him, and was beside as well informed as himself.



## C H A P. XI.

*A peep behind the curtain. Royal amusements; heroic principles and valour; with an approved shield against certain terrible dangers.*

WHEN the minister had gone through the ceremonies of his levee with proper dignity, he went to his master. The king appeared to be in the prime of life, hale, strong, and active. He was seated at a table with a parcel of shuttle-cocks before him, and mending a racket with as much earnestness as a school-boy of seven years old.

The moment he raised his eyes from his work, and saw his minister, "Come (said he, starting up, and stripping himself to his shirt) "I have been waiting for you some time. I'll "try if I cannot beat you more shamefully to-day than I did yesterday."

The minister, who knew his cue, forgot all his gravity in an instant, and following the  
royal

royal example set him, threw off his cloaths also, and, taking up a racket, prepared for the attack, which he seemed to maintain with as much eagerness and delight as his master, till he saw him begin to be tired, when, feigning himself unable to strike another stroke, he dropped the racket out of his hand, and sat down puffing and blowing on the floor, while the king, to shew his superior abilities, and insult his antagonist, gave half a dozen strokes more by himself.

As soon as they had recovered their breath, and put on their cloaths, “May it please your majesty, (said the minister, resuming his solemnity) I have just received an account from Portugal. Your invincible arms bear all before them, and will soon reduce the whole kingdom. They have already taken a considerable village, and burned two farm-houses.”

“Have they so? (interrupted his sacred majesty) that’s well done. Send them orders to burn all before them. I wish I was with them. I love such sport in my heart. I’d soon make their king rue his refusing my friendship. But how soon will they take Lisbon? I long to go there, and see how it looks after the earthquake, whether it is any thing like Herculaneum.”

“Your majesty’s army is advancing toward it, (answered the minister) but the roads are bad, and the country-people oppose them, so that they are obliged to march with great circumspection.”

“Why do not they shoot them? (replied the monarch) If I was there, not one of them

“ them should escape. I’d kill them all myself, as I’ll shew you just now. The enemy is drawn up ready for battle, and I only waited for you to see me attack them.”

Then going into another apartment that looked into a close court, and leading his minister to the window, “ There they are, (continued he, laughing with delight, as he pointed to a number of cats which were immured in the court;) there is the army of the enemy. The red ones are English, the rest are Portuguese. Go, reach me those guns yonder. I’ll attack them directly. It will be a glorious surprize. While I shoot with one gun you shall load the other, so that we’ll keep up a constant fire.”

With these words he began the attack, shouting in triumph at every shot, “ There falls an Englishman. There a Portuguese! Now I charge them on the right; now on the left;— now in the front; now in the rear. I’ll shew them that I am a general. See how they run! helter, skelter, pell mell.”

His heroic majesty carried on his attack in this manner with such eagerness, and continued it so long that his minister was more tired of loading for him, than he had been of his match at shuttle-cock; at length, observing that one of the wounded cats screamed in an uncommon manner, “ A truce! A truce! (said he) your majesty should slacken your fire. The enemies acknowledge your victory, and send a trumpet to desire leave to bury their dead. According to the laws of war, that is never refused: beside, if you kill them all to-day, what will you do for an ar-

“ my



“ my to attack another time? There is not  
 “ one cat left in all Madrid; your majesty’s  
 “ wars have consumed the whole species.”

“ Well then, (said the victorious monarch,  
 “ who was by this time sufficiently fatigued  
 “ himself) I will grant them a truce; and do,  
 “ you take care that there is a supply of pro-  
 “ visions sent them. Their magazines I ima-  
 “ gine are nearly exhausted; I scorn, to starve  
 “ my enemies. Hah! hah! hah! Don’t you  
 “ think now that I could kill all those Portu-  
 “ guese? Egad I’ll go and head my army my-  
 “ self, as I did once before, and not let one  
 “ of them escape.”

The smoak of the monarch’s artillery, and  
 the screaming of the wounded cats making the  
 field of battle not a very agreeable place to stay  
 in, the king and his minister returned to the  
 closet. As soon as the latter had once more  
 composed his features, “ May it please your  
 “ majesty, (said he) by the accounts from your  
 “ invincible army in Portugal I find, that it is  
 “ in vain to think of reducing that people to  
 “ subjection and obedience. Those who sub-  
 “ mit one day rebel again the next; so that  
 “ there is no end of giving them quarter. Be-  
 “ side, the English are expected every day to  
 “ land to their assistance, and then their num-  
 “ bers may prove troublesome. I am therefore  
 “ come to know what orders you will please  
 “ to send to your generals, to direct their con-  
 “ duct.”

“ Orders! (answered his most sacred ma-  
 “ jesty) to put them all to the sword; that is  
 “ the surest way to make them obedient. As  
 “ for the English, we must take care what we  
 do,

“ do with them : they are all hereticks, and  
 “ magicians, and deal with the devil. I re-  
 “ member very well how they frightened me  
 “ once before, till I got the pope to bless my  
 “ night-cap ; and then I defied them and their  
 “ witchcraft too. They could do me no harm  
 “ while I had that on. I am sorry that it is  
 “ worn out, or I would go and have a stroke  
 “ at them myself ; but I could never bear to  
 “ be one minute without it, while there hung  
 “ a rag of it together. However, I’ll send to  
 “ him for another ; and, at the same time, it  
 “ would not be amiss to send enough for the  
 “ whole army, and his holiness might bless  
 “ them all together ; and when the sol-  
 “ diers have got them, they’ll be a match  
 “ for the heretic English, and the devil to  
 “ help them.”

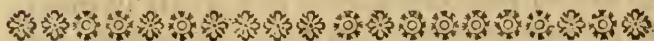
“ What your majesty says is extremely right ;  
 “ (replied the minister) and it would be very  
 “ improper for you to hazard your sacred life,  
 “ before you have gotten such an infallible de-  
 “ fence to guard it. In the mean time though,  
 “ will your majesty please to send orders to  
 “ your generals, for putting the country un-  
 “ der military execution ? They will have  
 “ double weight, when under your own  
 “ hand.”

“ Aye ! (returned the gracious monarch)  
 “ Give me pen and ink, and I will write to  
 “ them this instant, to burn and destroy all  
 “ before them, and put man, woman, and  
 “ child to the sword, without mercy or dis-  
 “ tinction. Or, stay ! It will do as well after  
 “ the puppet-show ; I am in haste now : and,  
 “ do you hear ! Order public rejoicings to be  
 “ made ;

“made; and send to the bishops, to sing *te Deum* for what we have already done.”

It was some time before I could recover myself from the astonishment and horror with which this scene struck me. “Just Heaven! (thought I) are these thy substitutes on earth? Can the vices of man have sunk him so entirely below thy care, that he should be given up thus to the most despicable destruction? be made the play-thing of a fool, and slaughtered for his meer amusement? I can bear the sight no longer.”

Saying this, I flung out of the court, in honest indignation, and *wished* myself directly into France, in hopes of being relieved by the contrast between the manners of that dissipated, gay people, and those where I was. “If I must be among fools, (said I) let them be merry ones. Let not the affectation of wisdom make folly more disgusting.”



## CHAP. XII.

*Scene changed. Pleasant instance of the power of example. Grand attendance at a lady's toilet. Secrets of favouritism.*

THE effect which I felt from this change is scarce to be conceived. The smile of pleasure and complacency that softened every face I saw, soon dispelled the gloom which I had contracted in the late solemn scene, and infected me also to such a degree, that my features

tures began insensibly to relax into a grin, and I could hardly keep my feet from capering as I went along with the croud, whom I found going to pay their court to the king's mistress.

They all stopped in the antichamber to her apartments, where they waited with the most complaisant patience for the return of the favoured few who were admitted into her presence, to learn from them the modes of thought and action which she pleased to prescribe for the day.

Curious to see a person who was able thus to rule the happiness of so many, I entered the dressing-room, where I found her at her toilet, attended in a manner that exceeded my imagination, accustomed as I was to uncommon scenes. At her feet kneeled a bishop, in all his sacred robes, buckling her shoes. The bason in which she washed her hands was held by a peer of the first rank. A counsellor of the parliament painted her cheeks. A farmer of the revenues set her jewels in order. A general powdered her hair. An admiral tied her ribbons; and, to entertain her, a cardinal read a loose lampoon.

When this important work was finished she arose, and, rewarding her happy servants with a gracious nod, retired with the cardinal into another room, to talk upon business. As soon as they were alone, "Your ladyship, I think," (said the cardinal, laughing) "has been grandly waited on this morning. Pray, have you the same attendance every day?"

"If I would receive it, (answered she) I might have ten times more. There is no thing so fulsome, that those sycophants will  
"not



“ not say ; nothing is so servile that they will  
 “ not do. I know the baseness of their souls,  
 “ and therefore trample them thus under my  
 “ feet, to anticipate the insults which I am  
 “ sensible they would heap upon me on any  
 “ reverse of fortune. As they worship the sun-  
 “ shine of court-favour, it is but just to let  
 “ them toil in the heat of it for a while.”

“ But how did your ladyship gather such a  
 “ grouse? (interrupted the cardinal, who seem-  
 “ ed not much to like some part of what she  
 “ said, and therefore was desirous to put a stop  
 “ to reflections so general) Almost every pro-  
 “ fession in the state had a representative at  
 “ your toilet.”

“ Yes, (replied she) and I design to set most  
 “ of these representatives at the head of their  
 “ professions too, which was the occasion of  
 “ my desiring to see you this morning.”

“ But does your ladyship know (said the  
 “ cardinal) whether they are qualified to fill  
 “ those places? Many of them require parti-  
 “ cular judgment and experience.”

“ Qualified! (interrupted her ladyship, with  
 “ a contemptuous smile) Yes; I have taken  
 “ care to be satisfied, that they all have the  
 “ qualifications I want; and as for any other,  
 “ they are answerable themselves; so let them  
 “ take care of that. I am to give them all  
 “ their definitive answers this morning; so if  
 “ you will go into that closet, you may over-  
 “ hear what passes, and will be a judge of  
 “ their qualifications.”

The cardinal obeyed; and her ladyship ring-  
 ing for one of her attendants, ordered him to  
 let

let the general know she was at leisure to speak with him.

As soon as he entered, "Well sir, (said her ladyship, cutting short all compliments, and entering directly upon business) I have spoken to the minister about you, and am sorry to find there are so many objections made, that it will be necessary for me to exert my utmost interest to serve you. However, as I have undertaken it, I will not be foiled."

"I am under infinite obligation to your ladyship, (answered the general) and shall endeavour to make a return."——

"Sir, (interrupted she) the return I expect is a punctual performance of your proposal; which was, to give me two thirds of all (exclusive of your pay) that you can possibly make by this commission, as well what you can subtract from the superfluous appointments of your own army, as the plunder and spoil of the enemies. You remember, sir, that this was your own proposal."

"I do, Madam, (answered he) and shall faithfully perform it, though really the appointments of the army at present are so very short, and even these so badly supplied, that I fear what may be saved from them will not answer your expectation, though I will do what I can; in an enemy's country soldiers may shift for themselves. But whatever this falls short shall be made up in the other article. The enemies have had a long opportunity to enrich themselves, which will turn out well to your account now. I'll strip them to the skin for you. It is good

“ policy to ruin an enemy’s country which we  
“ do not design to keep possession of ; as it dis-  
“ ables them from making head again for a  
“ considerable length of time. I hope also to  
“ conduct the military operations of the cam-  
“ paign in such a manner, that your ladyship  
“ shall not be ashamed of having recommend-  
“ ed me to the command.”

“ As to that, sir, (replied she) it is no affair  
“ of mine. You are to take care of that up-  
“ on your own account; and I wish you may,  
“ if it were only to disappoint the presages of  
“ those who opposed your promotion; some of  
“ whom went so far as to say, that you were  
“ destitute of every qualification necessary for  
“ so important a charge.”—— Saying this, she  
turned from him, leaving him to enjoy the plea-  
sure of meditating on her last words.

The departure of the general made way for  
the entrance of the admiral, who was sum-  
moned next, and whom her ladyship addressed  
with as little ceremony as she had shewn to  
the former.

“ You have been recommended to me, sir,  
“ (said she) by one of my women to whom, I  
“ understand, you have the honour of being  
“ related, as a proper person to be entrusted  
“ with the command of a fleet, to cruize upon  
“ the enemy; and, on her vouching your me-  
“ rit, I have got you preferred before several  
“ officers of known ability.”

“ I am eternally devoted to your ladyship,  
“ (answered he, elated at his success) and hope  
“ I shall be so happy as not to disappoint your  
“ expectations in any respect.”

“ I

“ I hope not, (replied she) and, as I con-  
“ fide in the character given me of you, have  
“ not yet exprefsly ftipulated any conditions;  
“ but you muft not imagine upon that account  
“ that I do not expect any. You know the  
“ nature of the command which you are to go  
“ upon. It is to attack the enemy’s trade,  
“ and plunder their fettlements in thofe places  
“ where you expect to meet the leaft refiftance.  
“ Now, fir, in executing fuch a commiffion  
“ you muft certainly make many valuable cap-  
“ tures; three fourths of the clear produce of  
“ which I fhall expect, for procuring you the  
“ command; the reft you may divide among  
“ yourfelves. If you approve of this, your  
“ commiffion fhall be made out directly.”

“ I am too fenfible of your ladyfhip’s favour,  
“ (returned he) to diflike any thing you pro-  
“ pofe. As for myfelf, I have nothing in view  
“ but honour; and that, at leaft, I fhall have  
“ an opportunity to acquire.”

“ Honour, fir! (interrupted ſhe haftily)  
“ How do you mean? If it is by fighting with  
“ the fleets of the enemy, you quite miftake  
“ the matter. Inſtead of that, you muft ufe  
“ all poffible care to avoid them, and not run  
“ the hazard of difappointing the design upon  
“ which you are ſent, and loſing the fleet en-  
“ truſted to you in attempting to acquire ho-  
“ nour. Acquire profit, and leave honour to  
“ the enemy.”

“ Yes!—— But pleaſe your ladyfhip, (an-  
“ ſwered the ſeaman, who did not ſo well re-  
“ liſh the latter part of his inſtructions) How  
“ ſhall I answer that to the king? I ſhall be  
“ broke with infamy.”



“Never fear, (replied she :) do you take  
 “care to make a profitable cruize, and I will  
 “protect you from all danger of that kind;  
 “and perhaps make interest also to have you  
 “sent out again with a greater force, when  
 “you shall not be under a necessity of ob-  
 “serving such caution.” Encouraged by this,  
 the admiral promised to obey her orders, and  
 went away with an high heart.

The admiral was succeeded by the farmer-  
 general, who, advancing to her ladyship with  
 a confident air, “I have taken the liberty (said  
 “he) to bring your ladyship a suit of jewels,  
 “which I hope you will like. I should not  
 “presume to offer them, if they were not fit  
 “for the first sovereign in Europe to wear.”

“You are always very obliging; (answered  
 “her ladyship, casting her eye carelessly upon  
 “the jewels as she took them) they are indeed  
 “pretty enough.”

“Your ladyship does not see half their beau-  
 “ty; (replied the farmer) if you will please to  
 “look a little closer, you will have a better  
 “notion of their value.”

“I beg your pardon, sir, (returned she, tak-  
 “ing notice of the paper they were wrapped in,  
 “which was a bill of exchange for a great  
 “sum of money) I like them extremely. They  
 “certainly are very fine; and I must say that  
 “you have the politest method of presenting  
 “any thing of any man I know. I have  
 “wanted to see you for some time, to let you  
 “know that your proposal is accepted of.”

“I am much obliged to your ladyship (an-  
 “swered he) and shall strive to merit your fa-  
 “vour on all occasions; though really I am  
 VOL. II. L “not

“not quite free from apprehensions of meeting  
 “with such difficulties in this affair, as may  
 “make it much less advantageous than is ima-  
 “gined. The people are so exhausted by the  
 “multitude of their taxes, that they declare  
 “themselves unable to pay any more, and in  
 “their despair express a discontent little short  
 “of rebellion; so that I believe we shall be  
 “under a necessity of calling for assistance from  
 “the army to levy any thing.”

“And you shall have it, (replied her lady-  
 “ship) whenever you require it. That is a  
 “proof of their being exhausted, indeed! If  
 “they are in want, let the men all list in the  
 “army, that is the proper place for them;  
 “and then the women and children will have  
 “enough. Don’t you shew the least tender-  
 “ness to one of them. It only encourages the  
 “rest. Their complaints are all feigned. If  
 “they were in such distress as they pretend,  
 “their spirits would hardly be so high.

“I shall punctually observe your ladyship’s  
 “directions, (returned he) and depend on your  
 “protection, if any thing should happen.

The counsellor of the parliament succeeded  
 the farmer-general, to whom her ladyship ad-  
 dressed herself with as little ceremony as the  
 others. “Sir, (said she) I have considered of  
 “what you said to me, and fear the scheme  
 “is impracticable. Your people seem too  
 “refractory to be influenced by such me-  
 “thods.”

“Madam, (answered he) I must beg leave  
 “to say, your ladyship’s apprehensions are  
 “groundless. I know the temper of every  
 “man among them, and what will prevail  
 “on

“on each. If you please to make the experiment, I will answer for the event.”

“Well, sir, (replied she) then it shall be so, and you shall have the place on the terms proposed; though, if your scheme succeeds readily, I shall expect a farther consideration, as it will then be much more valuable.”

“Your ladyship (returned he) may depend on my obedience to any thing you require.”

“That’s true, (added her ladyship, calling him back just as he was going out of the room) there is one thing which I had like to have forgot mentioning, though indeed it was plainly implied in what we said. It is likely that the jesuits will offer large sums of money, to avert the storm that threatens them. That, you know, I am to share in, equally with the other perquisites of your place.”

“Why—really—(said he) if your ladyship insists upon it——; though, as it is but a contingency, it is difficult to bring it within any rule.”

“Sir, (answered she warmly) I do and will insist upon it; and think it odd for you to make any difficulty.”

“No, Madam! by no means! (replied he) I make no difficulty at all; but till your ladyship had declared your pleasure, it was impossible for me to foresee it. Is there any thing else?”

“No, (returned her ladyship) not that I recollect now. If I should think of any thing farther, I will let you know.”

The next who was admitted to an audience was the nobleman who had held the basin to her ladyship, as she washed her hands. “I am sorry, my lord duke, said she, (as soon as he had paid his compliments) that I have been obliged to make you wait so long; but business, my lord——”

“Your ladyship (answered his grace, with the utmost complaisance) need be under no concern. I am no stranger myself to the urgency of state-affairs.”

“Well, my lord, (said she) at length I have the honour to congratulate your grace on your son’s success. His majesty made many difficulties at first; but they all vanished when I told him of the match between the marquis and my cousin. He said, he could refuse nothing to any one who was to be allied to me.”

“My son is in duty obliged to his majesty, (replied his grace) and I have a just sense of your ladyship’s favour.”

“I am glad, my lord, (continued she) that your good sense and prudence have enabled you to conquer that absurd pride of family, which makes fools of so many. Though your son’s intended wife is the daughter of a mechanic, she is my kinswoman; and, if I live, I’ll make the proudest peer of France glad to marry into my family. The king is the fountain of nobility, and what he can bestow they shall not want.”

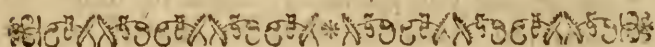
“Your ladyship’s own merit (answered he coolly) makes it an honour to any family to be allied to you. I will send my son to re-

“turn



“turn his thanks to your ladyship, and receive your farther commands.”

The bishop was now the only one who remained; but her ladyship had already had too much business that morning, and therefore sent him word, that she could not see him till some other time.



### C H A P. XIII.

*Make hay while the sun shines. All go to the market, where they can have most for their money. A conversation concluded in character.*

THESE important matters being thus dispatched, the cardinal came out of his closet, and smiling at her ladyship, “It is a pity (said he) that your ladyship cannot publicly assume the office of prime minister, you do business in such a matterly manner.”

“Why, (answered she, laughing) I have no notion of making many words, when I have resolved upon a thing; nor of using the agency of others in what I can do better myself. They always make such bungling work, that I have no patience with them. Plain-dealing prevents mistakes. Beside, they cannot get such good terms as I do. People chaffer and higgler with them, who do not in the least object to what I require. As to the breach of decency, I despise it. I study

L 3

“my

“ my own conveniency, not other people’s opinions.”

“ Your ladyship judges very rightly ; (replied he) great minds are above the rules which direct the conduct of their inferiors.”

“ Well ! (resumed her ladyship) Do not you think now that all these persons are properly qualified for my purpose ? I hold my power by a very precarious tenure, and therefore think it prudence to make the most of it while it lasts. What is the interest or honour of the kingdom to me ? I know that with the king’s favour I gained the hatred of every other person in the kingdom, and that on the loss of that I should feel all the weight of the latter ; to avoid which I’ll take care to provide what shall make my retreat elsewhere comfortable, for I will never stay a moment after I become subject to their insults ; and for that very reason I send my money before me as fast as I can.”

“ Then your ladyship (replied the cardinal) is resolved on going to England ! ”

“ Most certainly ; (said she) What other place could I expect the same safety or satisfaction in ? A person that has but money enough to give into the extravagancies of the mode will never want an agreeable reception there. As to the difficulty you made about going with me, there is nothing in it. There will no more objection be made to your character than to mine. As soon as the novelty is worn off, we shall pass as unnoticed as we can wish, and meet as much respect as we can pay for. The pope himself, so-

“ lennly

“femly as he is abjured, would find a welcome in England for his money; so that you need not be so delicate and timorous. It is but laying aside your red hat, and you need apprehend nothing.”

“Your ladyship (answered the cardinal, who did not much like the manner in which she spoke these last words) cannot think that I should make any difficulty of following you to the remotest part of the world. The happiness I enjoy in your favour exceeds every other consideration. As to those people who have been with you this morning, is it your pleasure that I should mention them to the king; or will your ladyship rather do it yourself? Those I mean whom the importance of the employments which you design them for makes it necessary to observe such caution about. There will be great murmuring at their promotion among the nobility, who have applied for those commands.”

“Let them murmur on; (replied she haughtily) I despise every thing in their power to say or do! I’ll humble their pride, by shewing them how little I regard them. I made the duke wait so long to-day, to let him see that his son’s marrying my relation gave him no consequence with me. As to this affair, I’ll speak to the king myself, for form-sake; but you may order their several commissions to be got ready in the mean time.”

“Really, (returned the cardinal) I think you gave his grace sufficient reason, even after he was admitted, to see that you held him not in very high respect. But how

“came you not to see the bishop? Had he any particular business?”

“Business! (said her ladyship, after a loud laugh) Yes; and that no less than a cardinal’s hat, I assure you. Because I got you one for gartering my stockings, he founds his pretensions on buckling my shoes. Hah! hah! hah! It is true he offers fair. He undertakes to be either for or against the Jesuits, for or against the *constitution*; in short, any thing, or every thing I please, now, or at any other time.”

“Pious prelate! (added the cardinal, after he had joined in the laugh) He has a most convenient conscience, and cannot fail to rise in the church. I presume you have not rejected so ample offers.”

“I am not resolved about him yet; (replied she) I must try his patience here first for a while. When I have broken him sufficiently by attendance, I’ll then consider whether it is proper to gratify his ambition, or give him a refusal.”

Their political conference was broken off here, by one of a softer nature. The cardinal was too gallant not to dedicate some part of his private audience to love, and her ladyship too tender to refuse his addresses. After some time spent in dalliance, the cardinal recollected that the king was by that time returned from hunting, and accordingly hastened away to wait upon him; while her ladyship prepared to receive the visit which his majesty never failed to pay her every day.





## C H A P. XIV.

*A curious, though not an uncommon picture. Play a trout properly, and you'll catch it. The fascination of ease.*

**I**T was not very long before the king arrived. From the nature of their connection I expected that their meeting would be attended with the warmest expressions of passion; but there appeared no traces of any such thing between them. The king entered her apartment with a listless, indifferent air, as if he knew not what else to do with himself; and, lolling into a chair, scarce returned any answer to her enquiries after his health; which she also expressed with the coolness of compliment and words of course.

When he had sat, or rather dozed thus for some time, in a kind of suspension of thought, he seemed as it were to awake, and turning to his mistress, gave her an account of his morning's sport, as particularly as if she understood it as well as himself; while she listened to him with the greatest attention and appearance of pleasure, asking him every now and then such questions as should lead him to repeat those passages in which she saw he took the most delight.

When his spirits were somewhat raised in this manner, and the lady thought him in a proper humour for her purpose, she artfully

turned the conversation upon business. “ I hope (said she, as if carelessly and only from common curiosity) that your majesty has received agreeable accounts from your armies this morning. I hear there are expresses arrived.”

“ Aye ! (answered he) so the cardinal informed me ; but I suppose they have brought nothing material, as he said no more.”

“ I cannot help thinking it very strange, (continued she) that such powerful armies as your majesty sends into the field do not bear down all before them. Your enemies are no way able to oppose them with equal force. I should fear that there must be a fault somewhere.”—— Then observing that he seemed to listen to her with some attention, “ Is your majesty certain (continued she) that the generals to whom you intrust the conduct of your armies are equal to the charge, or at least that they do not protract the war, for the sake of continuing in their commands ? Some thing or other must be the reason of it.”

“ Why, yes ! (replied the king) I have often thought so myself ; and therefore I believe I’ll even make a peace, and so have done with them all.”

“ A peace ! (exclaimed she suddenly, equally surprised and alarmed at the word) I did not know that your majesty had any thoughts of peace ; to be sure, it is most desirable—on proper terms.”

“ I can’t say (returned he) that I should have any thought of the kind in the present situation of affairs, if so many miscarriages  
“ did

“ did not in a manner force me to it. It is  
 “ very disagreeable to be disappointed in all my  
 “ great designs, and that after so vast an ex-  
 “ pence of blood and treasure.”

“ Disappointed! (returned her ladyship, who  
 “ now took her cue) Your majesty can never  
 “ be disappointed in any design, till you are  
 “ pleased to drop it. Inferior princes, who  
 “ want power to execute their will, may be  
 “ disappointed; but not a monarch, whose  
 “ word is a law to millions.”—— Then rais-  
 “ ing her voice, and assuming an air of indig-  
 “ nation, “ A peace! No! (continued she) Your  
 “ majesty will never think of a peace, till your  
 “ enemies are brought to beg it on their knees.  
 “ It were beneath the dignity of your crown,  
 “ and a lessening of your own honour. As for  
 “ the trifling successes, which have dejected  
 “ some of your own subjects as much as they  
 “ have elevated the insolence of your enemies,  
 “ one campaign, properly conducted, will ef-  
 “ fectually reverse them. Shall it be said that  
 “ the mighty kingdom of France, governed by  
 “ a prince equally the delight of his people, and  
 “ the terror of his foes, was obliged to receive  
 “ the law from a few mechanic islanders?”

“ But what can be done to prevent it? (said  
 “ he, roused from his lethargy, by the spirited  
 “ manner in which she spoke) They tell me,  
 “ that my revenues are quite exhausted, and  
 “ my subjects crying out for peace.”

“ Who tells your majesty so? (answered she)  
 “ A dastardly, slothful set, who, regardless of  
 “ your glory, think of nothing but enjoying  
 “ in luxurious ease the fortunes they have  
 “ amassed by every iniquitous means. The reve-



"nues of a king of France can never be ex-  
 "hausted, while his subjects have a penny left.  
 "All the wealth in your kingdom is yours.  
 "You are not obliged to beg from your peo-  
 "ple, as the king of England does. As to  
 "their seditious cries for peace, if your majes-  
 "ty was to pay attention to them, you would  
 "never carry on a war; and for their wants,  
 "they are all feigned. Look around your  
 "court, look at those very people (traitors I  
 "had almost called them) who tell you such  
 "stories, and see whether any thing like want  
 "appears about them. Perhaps they mean  
 "that the populace is dissatisfied, because they  
 "cannot live in such luxury as they do them-  
 "selves. If they really do want, why do not  
 "their compassionate advocates assist them out  
 "of their abundance, without applying to your  
 "majesty? Are you only to suffer for the wants  
 "of the people? Must your glory, your ho-  
 "nour be given up, to save the superfluous  
 "wealth of your nobles? The very thought is  
 "treason; and no loyal subject would harbour  
 "it himself, much less presume to suggest it  
 "to your majesty. Every one who mentions  
 "peace till your enemies are humbled, and all  
 "your great designs accomplished, is a traitor  
 "to your interest and glory."

"But if I continue the war, (said the king);  
 "how can I be sure of better success than I  
 "have met hitherto?"

"Change the persons who have the conduct  
 "of the war, (answered her ladyship, who had  
 "now drawn him to the point she wanted) and  
 "never doubt of the success. You have hi-  
 "therto employed the nobility, who look up-



“on the command of fleets and armies as their  
“birth-right, and consequently take no pains  
“to acquire that military knowledge which  
“alone gives a just title to command, and  
“promises success; but upon any misfortunes,  
“though evidently occasioned by their own er-  
“rors, grow weary of the war, and advise  
“peace. I would remove them all, and em-  
“ploy only those who have given instances of  
“merit equal to such a trust; and who, having  
“no dependance but upon your majesty’s fa-  
“vour, shall omit nothing possible to obtain  
“it; nor, when their own ambition is satis-  
“fied, insolently presume to advise your ma-  
“jesty to sacrifice your glory to their ease.”

“But where (replied he) shall I find such  
“persons? I know of none.”

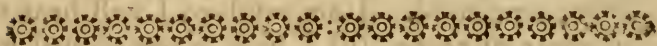
“There are enough, (returned she) if your  
“majesty pleases to make use of their service.  
“I myself could at this very time name both a  
“general and an admiral, for whose success I  
“would be security to your majesty: and as to  
“your revenues being exhausted, and your  
“parliament uneasy, I have just now been  
“talking with a counsellor who undertakes to  
“make the latter as implicitly submissive to  
“your will as you can desire: as I also know  
“a farmer, who will make no excuses of the  
“people’s incapacity to pay your majesty’s  
“taxes. All the difficulties which those peace-  
“makers talk so much of are owing solely to  
“their own mismanagement; and they are  
“unfaithful servants, who make so many ob-  
“stacles to obeying your commands. When  
“the proud lazy nobles see that you can be  
“better served without them, their insolence  
“will

“ will be humbled, and they will strive to merit the employments which now they in a manner demand as their due.”

“ Well ! (said the king, who was now worked up to the proper pitch) Be it so then ! Let those people whom you speak of be employed. I am resolved I will hear no more of peace, till I have accomplished my designs. I will not submit my will to their’s, nor postpone my glory to such mean considerations.” — Then, rising from his chair in a heat, he expressed several sentiments of magnanimity and heroism, as he walked about the room, till, cooling from his passion, he sunk into his former serenity, and, returning to his chair, took a nap, to dream of conquests and glory, and compose his spirits for his dinner ; while his mistress dispatched a billet to the cardinal, to let him know that she had settled every thing, and he might give their several commissions to the persons she had appointed in the morning.

“ By what despicable agents (said I to myself, turning away in disgust) does Heaven work the most dreadful events ! How weak is the thread by which a mighty people are guided ! At length I see the mystery of favouritism. To leave the mind absolutely at ease, watch its ruling passions, and, without seeming to have any thing else in view, artfully suggest the objects of one’s own designs, as the means of their gratification. My soul is sick of vice and folly. I’ll seek relief in that happy land where a free people is governed by a king who is himself free, before such manifold abuses of the blessing.

“sings of Heaven, as have for some time engrossed my attention, make me hate my own nature, and abjure the name of man.”——  
Saying this, I *wished* myself directly into England.



## CHAP. XV.

*The scene changed. A pleasing prospect suddenly over-cast. An easy way to get rid of a wrangler, with a comfortable plaister for a broken head. He that throws dirt always soils his fingers.*

ON my arrival in England, I found myself near the seat of a nobleman of the first rank, in that part of the island which lay next to France, not having thought of any particular place when I *wished* myself from thence.

The largeness of the house, and the flourishing condition of the extensive demesne around it, shewed the wealth of the owner, as the smile of content on the faces of his tenants proved his generosity and justice. Industry procured plenty, and liberty sweetened at the same time that it secured enjoyment.

Struck with the contrast between this, and the scenes I had lately seen, I shared sympathetically in the general joy; and in the honest pride of my heart, resolved to please myself with taking a more particular view of the man whose virtues diffused such happiness around him. But what was my surprize and disappointment, to find the prospect overcast where I expected to have seen it brightest! In his own family, and  
where



where his more immediate presence should have operated with the greatest force, ambition had banished harmony, and poisoned every breast with animosity and rancour.

The flames of this dissention, which had long been smothered, burst out with the most ridiculous violence, just at the time I entered. Though such a domestic scene as this was a descent from those *great* ones which I had lately been engaged in observing; yet, as it displayed the inconsistency of the human heart in a new light, I thought it merited my attention.

The occasion of the breach was this: One of the lord's agents, who, by the activity and sanguineness of his temper, had in a manner engrossed the whole management of his master's affairs, had taken it in his head to go to law with one of the principal gentlemen in the neighbourhood, from an apprehension that he intended to take the part of a cousin of his, with whom his lordship had had a long suit for encroaching upon his side of the common.

The agent had conducted this suit with equal judgment and success, and at a very great expence, for it was not his disposition to starve any cause he took in hand, foiled his adversary in all his attempts, and not only recovered from him the places he had unjustly possessed himself of, but also obtained several decrees for costs, by which he turned him out of so many other parts of his estate, that he had not left him a penny to fee an attorney to carry on the suit any longer, though his proud and litigious temper would not permit him to give it up.



Matters were in this situation, when the agent proposed filing a bill directly against the cousin, who (he said he had received undoubted intelligence) had entered into a private agreement with the other to supply him with money to go on with his law-suit, and assist him also with his interest to recover his losses. This was a direct breach of a former agreement between him and his lordship, by which he had obliged himself not to meddle in the dispute at all; the agent was for falling upon him without any ceremony, alleging, that it was much better to be plaintiff than defendant in any suit; as must certainly be their case if they were not before-hand with the other, who was at that very time preparing to attack them, as appeared by several late instances of his behaviour.

To this proposal his lordship did not think proper to give a determinate answer, till he should consult with the rest of his tenants and servants; as, by their leases, they were all bound to defray the expences of any suits which were for the general good of the estate. But when the agent acquainted them with his design, though he supported it with very strong reasons, and which in the sequel proved to be well founded, they were all of a different opinion, and said, it would be very imprudent to entangle themselves in a new dispute before they were out of the old, especially as they were already at a greater expence than they could well bear.

The agent, whose temper was too warm to brook opposition, without any respect to his master's presence, flew into a violent passion, and

and called them a parcel of poor-spirited trimming fellows, who would lose a pound to save a penny. They were not behind-hand with him in abuse, but said, that he was a hot-headed beggarly upstart, who, having no fortune of his own to lose, cared not what expence or danger he drew others into.

The lord thought it but just, in such a case as this, to follow the opinion of the majority, and therefore rejected the agent's proposal. But he did not give it up on that account; but resolved to try another method, by which he did not doubt of carrying his point. The great success with which he had managed his master's business, ever since he had been employed, had made him such a favourite with the tenants, and given him beside so great a consequence in his own eyes, that he thought his lordship could not do without him, and would therefore submit to any thing rather than part with him. Full of this opinion, he went to him next morning, and giving him up his keys, in a kind of pet, told him, he was sorry he could not serve his lordship any longer, as he thought proper to prefer other people's advice to his.

His lordship, as if he had been prepared for the thing, received the keys very calmly, and telling him he was also sorry to lose so good an agent, dismissed him most politely, with thanks for his past services.

This was a stroke the other was not prepared for. He stood thunder-struck for some moments; then, bursting into a flood of tears, kissed his lordship's hand passionately, and, declaring himself overcome by such goodness, said,

said, he was ready to spend the last hour of his life in the service of so kind a master. The consequence of this he thought would have been, that his lordship would directly return him his keys, and re-instate him in his employment, for he was far enough from designing to resign it; but he found himself disappointed in this also. The lord, much as he valued him for his abilities and honesty, both of which were unquestionable, had for some time felt the warmth of his temper, not without uneasiness, and was glad of so fair an opportunity of getting rid of a servant who had shewed on many occasion, as well as this, that he meant to be master; not doubting but he had others in his family capable of managing his affairs with equal fidelity and judgment.

The situation of the late agent on this occasion may be easily conceived. He retired to his own house, and throwing himself on his bed, gave his mind up to the most mortifying reflections. But what he felt from his own thoughts was nothing to the vexation he received from others. Such an affair could not in the nature of things be long kept a secret. The moment it came to the ears of his relations, and dependants, that he had lost his employment, they all flocked about him, croaking like so many ravens about a carrion; some of them asking impertinent questions, others giving absurd advice; this upbraiding him with his rashness, that accusing his master of ingratitude; and all lamenting the disappointment of the hopes they had built on his favour, till their noise and nonsense quite turned the poor man's head; the consequence of which was,

that



that in his delirium he wrote a letter to the clerk of the parish, which he was to read at the vestry, giving as a reason for his throwing up his employment, that his lordship truly would no longer submit to be guided by him; and therefore he did not think it proper to serve him any longer.

This effectually clinched the affair. If his master had even been inclined to over-look what had passed, and take him into his service again, the folly and insolence of this letter put it out of his power; as it would have been plainly acknowledging, that he resigned himself absolutely to his guidance.

The late agent's enemies did not fail to exaggerate this unaccountable conduct in the most malicious manner; but his lord viewed it in another light, and justly imputing it to madness, not only took no notice of it, but also, to comfort him in his distress, generously gave him an annuity sufficient to support him in the rank of a gentleman, expressly as a reward for his past services; and wrote a letter with his own hand to his wife, who was an high-spirited dame, and came from a good family, in which he soothed her vanity, by paying her the compliment of calling her a lady.

Though this act of bounty proceeded meerly from the generosity of his lordship's heart, the enemies of the late agent gave it a very different turn. The success which the latter had had in his business, and his sanguine professions of regard for the interest of the tenants, had won him their confidence and favour to such a degree, that they immediately looked upon his giving up his employment as a sign  
that

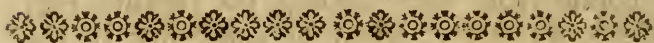


that there were some schemes to their disadvantage in meditation, which he would not join in; and, consequently, that their interests would be betrayed, and the law-suit which he had conducted with so much credit, and brought almost to an happy conclusion, at so great an expence, patched up in a poultry manner, and all the money lost.

To lessen him, therefore, in the opinion of the populace, was considered as the most effectual method to stop their clamors, and disable him from making mischief between them and his lordship's servants. For this purpose, to make the news of his having got the annuity soon enough and sufficiently known, the town-crier proclaimed it at the market-cross; and it was immediately insinuated, with the greatest industry, that it was the price of his boasted regard to the tenants; that he had sold his influence over them, and engaged to make them approve any measures his lordship pleased, however contrary to their interest and honour.

But though this ruined his consequence, it was far from having all the effect that was expected. The tenants seemed resolved to think that their interest was to be sacrificed, because the person who succeeded to the management of his lordship's business was not immediately of their own chusing; and therefore, instead of minding their work, and going to plough and cart, as they ought to do, they spent their time tippling in ale-houses, and railing at the new agent, even before he had time to do any thing that should shew whether he was capable of the business or not; and for fear this humour should cool, some mischief-making folks hired

a pack of ballad-fingers, to go about the streets singing black-guard songs of the agent and all his friends ; who, to return the compliment, got as scurrilous a crew as the others, who threw dirt and called foul names as fast as they, for their lives : so that the whole village was in an uproar, and any stranger, who should have heard both sides, must have concluded, that there was not a man in the parish who was not a beggarly, lousy, lying, pick-pocket, vagabond, cheat, and scoundrel.



## CHAP. XVI.

*A receipt for popularity. Turn a cast-horse to graze on a common. The old steward acts the second part to the agent's farce. An hint by the bye.*

THE lord, whose own good-nature made him wish to live in harmony with all the world, was greatly vexed at such scandalous wrangling thus under his nose ; not that he knew it all either : the new agent, who from a long acquaintance had a particular influence over him, let him hear no more of it than he thought proper, contriving to keep every one from him who should say a word which he did not dictate ; so that his lordship was made to believe, that all the disturbance and abuse came from the other side, and was levelled at him, as well as his servants.

Though all the servants were glad of the late agent's disgrace, in hopes of sharing some part of that power which he had engrossed so entirely to himself, that they were no more than meer cyphers in the family, the one who rejoiced most openly, was the old steward.

He had been many years a faithful servant, to the best of his knowledge and abilities, to his lordship's family; and though he was never thought to be so clear-headed or resolute in the management of affairs as the late agent, yet he was very useful in some things. He had made a considerable party among the tenants, for this lord's father, when he came first to the estate, to which he was apprehensive of having his title disputed, by the generous manner in which he gave his beef and beer among them, for he was very well to-pass in the world, and never failed to treat the mob with a bon-fire and a barrel of stingo every now-and-then; by which means he also won their hearts so, that he had always a party among the parishioners, to choose what officers he bade them, so that he was able to carry any point he pleased at the vestry, which, to do him justice, was ever what his lordship directed.

By this extravagant way of living, it is true, he had gone behind-hand a good deal, but he never stooped for that, he had still something left; and the stewardship, which he had had so long that he looked upon it as his own, brought him in a good penny beside, that enabled him very well to live on at his old rate.

The imperious manner in which the late agent behaved, had made the steward long wish to be rid of him; but he did not know  
how

how to bring it about; and, especially at this time, he would not even attempt it, for fear of giving any hinderance to his lord's affairs, which the other managed so well: but when he saw it thus done to his hand he could not contain his joy, but ran up and down to every servant in the house, from the butler to the scullion, poking his nose in their faces, and shaking hands with them on their happy deliverance. Coming among the rest to the new agent, and addressing him in the same manner, "My good friend, (returned the latter dryly) "take care. Do not run mad with joy to-day, nor with grief to-morrow."

The steward's heart was too full to take notice of this speech now, but he understood it when it was too late. I have observed that the new agent was in particular favour with his lord. Though getting rid of that over-bearing wrangler was a great point gained, it was far from being all that he had in view. The stewardship was the thing he had fixed his heart upon. It was the first place in rank in the service, and, by the command of the cash, gave a power of every thing to one who had spirit to exert it; which he was resolved to do to the utmost extent, and not be encroached upon and brow-beaten by any under-servant, as the other had been.

But, though he was sure of getting the place from his lord when it should be vacant, the long services of the old steward, and the interest which his hospitality had acquired him among the tenants, from the wealthiest of whom he had always found means to borrow any money his lord wanted, till the rents came in,



in, made him think it necessary to proceed with address, in getting him turned off. For this reason he paid him uncommon compliments, and let him go on just as he pleased, in expectation of his doing something, now that he was freed from restraint, that might give a colour for removing him; but, whether by chance or design, he disappointed his schemes, and proceeded so regularly that he could take no hold of him.

This obliged him to change his measures. Accordingly he gave orders to the receivers under the steward, (some of whom, tho' brought in by him, and under the greatest obligations to his bounty, basely betrayed him, the moment they saw him totter in his place) to perplex the business of his office as much as possible, and even dispute his orders, which, it was not doubted, would put him off his guard, and make him give the advantage that was sought for against him, by doing something irregular, in his resentment.

This scheme had the desired effect, though not precisely in the manner that was expected. The steward, ignorant of the snare laid for him, in the usual course of his business gave one of the attorneys, concerned in carrying on the law-suit, an order upon the receivers, for a sum of money to clear off his bill of costs. The receivers, as they had been directed, made a difficulty of paying it without an express order from his lordship. This was a direct attack upon the steward's authority. He ran instantly to the lord, and sputtering out his story as well as his passion would permit him, demanded that those insolent fellows should be

discharged directly, or he could not do his business any longer.

The lord, who by the bye was prepared for this second part of the agent's farce, answered him carelessly, that he was sorry to lose so old a servant; and, turning about, walked away, humming a tune. The steward, who had lived in a kind of familiarity with the late lord, could not bear such a slight; he left the room directly, and ran about the whole house, telling every one he met how ill his lordship had used him.

But he soon found that he had more cause of complaint than he knew of; for the very next morning his letter of attorney was superseded, and the stewardship given to the new agent, who thus got the whole business into his own hands, having put a creature of his own into the agency, who dared not to disobey his orders in any thing.

It is not easy to describe the old steward's astonishment at such an unexpected stroke. However, he preserved the dignity of his character much better than the late agent had done; for when he waited upon his lordship, to give him up his keys, &c. he made no mean attempts to recover his favour and keep his place; and when the lord, in the goodness of his heart, offered him an annuity also, being unwilling that he should want in his old days, he refused it with disdain, declaring it should never be said, "that old *True-penny*, who had spent so many pounds in good beef and strong beer, in his lordship's service, was glad to take up with a poultry annuity at last."

Such a return for his labour and expence should have been sufficient to open his eyes to the folly he had been so long guilty of, and have taught him to live frugally and quietly the remainder of his days; but the habit had taken too fast hold on him to be ever shaken off. The moment he went home to his own house, he gathered all his old pot-companions and trencher-friends about him, and fell to carousing as usual, flattering himself with a foolish hope, that they would stand so firmly by him at the next vestry, that his lord should not be able to have his business done, and therefore must be glad to give him his place again.

While he squandered away the remains of his substance in this idle manner, and his new friend the late agent (for society in disgrace had united them) sat brooding over his resentment, and meditating schemes of revenge, the new steward was far from enjoying his triumph in happiness. The fall of his predecessor, who had so long thought himself as firmly fixed as man could be, was a warning to him; and though he took all possible care to secure himself, by filling every place in the family, down to the very stable-boy, with his dependants, and letting no body, as I have observed before, come near his lord, who he was not satisfied was absolutely in his interest, yet his fears every moment formed new dangers to torment him; and he could not see his lord smile upon the most devoted friend he had in the world, without feeling a jealousy of having his own arts played upon himself, and being supplanted in his turn as he had supplanted the others.

However groundless these fears were at first, they soon threatened to realize the dangers which were only of their own creation. That openness and gayety of temper, which first gained him his lordship's favour, gave place to gloomy silence and reserve; and the universal benevolence and philanthropy which gave irresistible charms to his conversation, and commanded the esteem of every good mind, were soured into jealous envy, and suspicion, that sickened at the mention of a virtuous action.



## C H A P. XVII.

*An holiday, and a jolly day. A sumptuous feast, and a raree-show.*

SO many successive instances of folly, which could thus poison a profusion of happiness, and turn it into misery, filled me with the most melancholy reflections; but I was soon diverted from them, by something of a less serious nature.

The constable of the village in which the lord's house stood, in conformity to old customs, made a feast at this time for his lordship and his whole family, to which he sent them a solemn invitation by the parish-officers. Such a scene promised some amusement at least. I therefore returned with the officers who had come upon this important errand, desirous to see the whole process of so extraordinary an affair.



As the feast was to be given at the joint expence of the village, the principal inhabitants had assembled at the constable's house, and were sitting over a pot of beer, waiting for the return of those who had been sent with the invitation; though the whole was a thing of course, their anxiety was so great that not one of them could speak a word till their arrival: the moment they entered the room, all the rest laid down their pipes, adjusted their perriwigs, and wriggling their chairs nearer to the table, listened to the account with open mouths, and looks of the profoundest sagacity.

“ Well, gentlemen, (said the constable, who sat in an arm-chair to shew his authority) since his lordship has condescended to accept of our invitation, we should take care that every thing is prepared in the best manner for his reception. There will be many things wanted to make a proper appearance on such an occasion, and no one would stop at a trifling expence, especially as the money will be laid out among ourselves.”

This speech opened every mouth in the room at once. “ We shall all want new cloaths,” cried the taylor.

——“ New shoes,”—said the shoe-maker.

——“ New stockings,”—said the hosier.

——“ New wigs,”—said the barber.

——“ Our horses must be shod,”—said the farrier.

——“ Our houses repaired,”—said the brick-layer.

——“ Our chimneys swept,”—said the chimney-sweeper.

——“Our vaults emptied,”—said the night-man.

——“We must have a sermon,”—said the curate.

——“A speech,”—said the vestry-clerk.

——“A vomit, in case of repletion,”—said the doctor.

——“A clyster,”—said the apothecary.

——“A coffin,”—said the undertaker. In short, every person present asserted the want of something in his own way, to make the entertainment compleat; and the less necessary it was, the louder they roared.

When they had all bawled themselves hoarse, and the constable, by repeated thumps with his fist upon the table, obtained leave to speak, “Silence, gentlemen, (said he) we shall never do any thing at this rate. You are all for providing other things before we have fixed upon the victuals. Let us settle about them first.”

This word raised a tumult, ten times greater than the former; every one in the room roaring out at once for some particular dish, either that it was his trade to provide, or which he was fond of himself.

The butcher bawled out, Beef.—

The poulterer, fowls.—

The fishmonger, fish.—

——“A turtle,”—said an alderman.

——“A ragou,”—squeaked a Frenchman.

——“Pickled herrings,”—belched Mynheer.

——“Potatoes,”—cried an Irishman.

——“An haggis,”—said a Scot.

——“Leek-pottage,”—sputtered Taffy. In a word,

word, they all raised their voices with such vehemence, not one attending to what another said, that, since the building of Babel, there was not such a scene of confusion.

At length, the contest grew so high that they were just ready to fall together by the ears, when the constable, who sat all the while fretting his guts to fiddle-strings at this interruption of his speech, which he looked upon as an insult to his authority, put a stop to the whole tumult, by an accident. "Fire and fury!" (exclaimed he, raising his voice as loud as ever he was able) "Are you all mad?"

The word *fire*, which was all they attended to, filled them with affright. They thought the house was on fire, and repeating the cry with equal vehemence, they overturned the table, spilled the beer, and tumbling over one another, made the best of their way out.

As soon as they were undeceived, they returned into the room, and having recovered themselves a little by the help of a fresh supply from the ale-house, the constable, composing himself into proper dignity, resumed his speech: "I say, gentlemen, (said he) that, if we go on in this manner, it is impossible for us to conduct this affair with due decorum. We had better chuse out a set of us who understand these matters, to agree upon what is proper; and because there will be a great many things wanted beside victuals and drink, that no business should be overlooked, it will be right to have one of every trade chosen, and then there can be no mistakes."

This motion was universally approved, and accordingly they proceeded directly to make the

choice; but in this they were very near falling into as great confusion as before, every one being ambitious of the honour. At length, however, and with difficulty, it was settled; and then the selected few withdrew to the next ale-house, to consult undisturbed upon the affair.

When they were seated and had smoked a whiff or two, to settle their heads, the constable, who by his office was one of the number, opened their deliberations." "Gentlemen, (said he, puffing out a pillar of smoke) I believe I may say, without vanity, that there is no one in this company who understands these matters better than I do: I keep a good house myself, an hot joint every day, and roast and boiled, both, on Sundays; beside, my wife, it is well known, was bred up in a gentleman's family, and there learned a proper notion of doing things genteely. It is my opinion, therefore, that you leave the *whole* to me, and I will prevail upon her to give me advice."

"With your leave, Mr. constable, (answered a person who sat opposite to him, and heard him out with great impatience) though it be your luck to be in office this year, there are others in the parish who keep as good houses as you; and I believe my dame also has as good an opportunity of knowing these matters as another: I serve two or three gentlemen who keep French cooks, and she never goes to their houses with goods, that she does not learn some new piece of cookery from them; for she is a well-spoken body, and always asked to sit down among the  
"up-



“upper servants; and then she is so fond of  
 “practising what she thus picks up, that I  
 “hardly ever know the name of what I eat;  
 “but she tells me they are quite the mode, and  
 “so I submit; though, in truth, I cannot say  
 “but I should often prefer a cut of honest old  
 “England; in my opinion, there is nothing  
 “beats a roast sir-loin.”

This eloquent speech was followed by one as eloquent from every one present, declaring his own ability for this important affair, and putting in his claim to it. At length, when all saw that not one would give up his pretensions to another, they came to an agreement, that each should draw a bill of fare according to his taste and judgment, out of which they imagined they should certainly be able to make a proper choice.

Accordingly, they all went to work; and the streams which flowed from every mouth, while they were writing, proved with what candour they set down the things they liked best, and how glad they should be to eat them.

The bills of fare, produced upon this occasion, shewed that the English were not degenerated, in their stomachs at least, from their mighty ancestors. Buttocks upon buttocks, and sirloins without number.—Legs of pork, and saddles of mutton.—Filletts of veal and slices of bacon.—Hams by the dozen, and fowls by the groce.—Flocks of geese, and droves of turkies.—In short, the quantities of meat, when the bills were all read over together, turned the stomach of every one present, and made them readily accept the proposal of the man of the house, who undertook to

furnish out a magnificent feast, if they would leave the whole to him. This great point being thus happily settled, they settled their stomachs also with a glass of right coniac, and then retired to their respective homes, to give their wives an account of these important transactions.

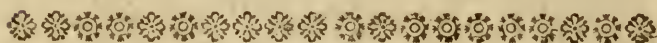
The fuss which was raised among the females upon this occasion, is not to be described. All their finery was immediately drawn forth, and examined; and then such consultations, and disputes with one gossip or another; such a clatter with mantua-makers, and milleners, putting lappets to this, and flounces to that, altering and turning, to set all things in order for making a proper appearance before my lord and my lady, that every house in the whole village was a scene of litter and distraction, from that till the day of the feast; many a poor tradesman sacrificing more than a year's profit of his business to his wife's vanity. Not that the husbands entirely neglected to adorn themselves either; but as their wives care was chiefly about their tails, theirs was confined to their heads, upon which every one heaped a bundle of grey hairs, as an emblem of his wisdom and experience, more huge than ever grew upon the oldest goat on *Giledd*; he that peeped out of the largest fleece thinking he cut the most respectable figure.

As for the feast, the ale-house man was not a moment at a loss in providing it. He had formerly been scullion in a gentleman's kitchen, so that he was not utterly unacquainted himself with the nasty ways of tossing up nice dishes: and now, with the help of an old

*French*

*French woman* who sold *Bef-à-la-mode* in a cellar, a *German* who made *Bologna* saussages, and a *Jew* who travelled about the country with *ginger-bread* and *cheese-cakes*, he made up a sufficient number of *things* with hard names, to satisfy the vanity of the entertainers, and poison all their guests, had they been fools enough to taste them; banishing the wholesome victuals of the country to the tables of the servants, as coarse and unfashionable; and giving nothing in the way that God made, or nature required it for nourishment and health.

Nor were the decorations less elegant and grand than the feast. As every trade in the parish had a representative in the set, to whom the management of matters was committed, it may be thought that they had a proper understanding among themselves, and did not neglect any article, however unnecessary and even absurd, which could possibly be foisted in to swell their respective bills.



## C H A P. XVIII.

“ *Impress’s quaint caparisons, and steeds;*  
 “ *Bases, and tinsel trappings; gorgeous knights,*  
 “ *Then marshall’d feast*  
 “ *Serv’d up in hall, with sewers and senechals.*

AT length the much wished-for day arrived. Words are too weak to convey an idea of the noise, hurry, and confusion, which reigned through the whole village; it seemed as if

chaos was come again. The streets, the lanes, the tops of the houses were filled with gaping crouds, who left their houses, at the first dawn of the morning, to secure the most convenient places where they might stand fasting all day, to see others go to a feast, in the afternoon. Nor were the happy few, who were admitted to the envied honour of seeing them eat, more provident. The thought of such a sight took away their appetites; and besides, they could not spare a moment from the important work of dressing, to take the least refreshment.

Tired of such complicated folly, I turned to his lordship's house, to see in what light he, and his attendants, looked upon this grand affair. My former knowledge of his natural good sense made me judge that he was above being infected with such absurdities. I was not deceived. He looked with pity upon the extravagance and folly of his tenants, at the same time that he received every testimony of their attachment with pleasure. But his servants were far enough from being so cool. The passion for seeing, and being seen, raged as violently in them as in the villagers themselves, and produced effects to the full as ridiculous.

When it was time for his lordship to go to this grand feast, he was summoned by a procession, from the village, who came to wait upon him. The extravagancies shewn upon this occasion exceed description; *devices without design, antics and emblems, destitute of meaning, humour, or ingenuity*, led the van; *asses in fur'd-gowns, and lambs in baste-board armour*, marched lovingly together. *Fools, from the hand of nature*, drop'd their their broad sneers,  
and



and grin'd as savages ; in a word, every guise, that folly could put on, without even attempting to mimick reason, made up the motley cavalcade, and kept the croud agape.

When they had expos'd themselves in this manner through the whole village, they ushered their guests into the place appointed for their entertainment, where they were marshalled according to their different ranks. I went with the croud, and took my station in the place from whence I could most conveniently see all that pass'd.

The numbers of every age, sex, and rank, which I saw around me, presented such a complicated scene, that notwithstanding the extraordinary powers confer'd upon me by my guide, my eyes were dazzled, my head grew giddy, and I was unable to view it with that distinctness which alone could give me pleasure. I hung down my head, disappointed and abashed, and swelling with an hopeless sigh, "O that  
 " I had my kind guide here now (said I) to deliver me from this confusion and distress, by  
 " directing my attention to the objects most  
 " worthy of it, and enabling me to over-look  
 " every thing else, as he did before."

I had scarce utter'd these words, when raising my eyes, I saw, to my inexpressible joy, my guide standing before me. "I heard your  
 " wish (said he, smiling at my surprize) and am  
 " come to gratify it. I see your senses sink  
 " under the pressure of such a multitude, and  
 " variety of objects."——Saying this he touch'd my eyes once more with his wand, when instantly the mists which swam before them were  
 dis-

dispelled, and I beheld all things with the greatest clearness and accuracy.

When I had indulged my curiosity for some time in gazing idly round me, “ The scene before you (said my guide) is a just representation of the world in which you are. This truly may be called, *The Paradise of Fools*. You have seen with what eagerness and pains these people prepared themselves for this great occasion; with what anxiety they panted for the arrival of this moment; and you now see to what a wise end! In such pursuits is the life of man, in general, consumed. He looks forward to some particular object, paints it in the colours most pleasing to his imagination; and then, full of the idea, flights the enjoyment of every thing else, and fixes his happiness on the attainment of this; but when he has succeeded, when that for which he so long sighed, so eagerly laboured, is at length in his possession, his wishes are as unsatisfied as ever, and he finds it is no more than *gaping at a feast, which others are eating*.

“ The persons who compose this croud are principally the inhabitants of the village, and the servants and attendants of the lord and his lady. The different pursuits of these two classes of people used formerly to create as great a difference in their manners, and appearance; but of late the case is quite altered; the bounds which were wont to separate them are for the most part broken down, and they intrude into each other’s provinces without distinction; his lordship’s servants, and the gentlemen of their neighbourhood practising every mean craft to get money,  
“ for

“ for which they were accustomed to despise  
 “ and ridicule the villagers; as these, in their  
 “ turn, affect all the follies and vices of the  
 “ fashion, and with an aukward profusion run  
 “ into the expences and extravagancies which  
 “ used to mark the character of the others.  
 “ Hence you see tradesmen keep hounds and  
 “ running horses, and their wives go as fine  
 “ as ladies; while gentlemen turn stock-job-  
 “ bers, and compound their debts to cheat their  
 “ creditors: and this is the reason of that odd  
 “ contrast, that contradiction of character in  
 “ every face you meet.

“ Just as these general reflections are, they  
 “ will be still more convincing when confirmed  
 “ by particular instances. Observe that over-  
 “ grown heap of mortality who sweats beneath  
 “ the load of her lace and jewels. From the  
 “ splendour of her appearance, you might rea-  
 “ sonably conclude that she was a person of the  
 “ first rank; but examine her nearer, and you  
 “ will see that the meanness of her looks sul-  
 “ lies the lustre of her diamonds, and her over-  
 “ acted airs of gentility shew that she is not in  
 “ her natural sphere.

“ She was the daughter of a country farmer,  
 “ who tho’ he had several good farms of his  
 “ own, was so bad a manager that he never  
 “ could keep a penny in his pocket. To pre-  
 “ vent his posterity’s feeling the same incon-  
 “ veniencies, he married his daughter to that  
 “ person, who sits neither asleep nor awake in  
 “ yonder corner, a shop-keeper in the village,  
 “ that she might be able to go to the till, and  
 “ take out money, whenever she pleased. For  
 “ some time they had good business, and went  
 “ on

“ on very well, till he unluckily got in with  
“ some of his lordship’s people, whom he must  
“ immediately imitate in all their ways, drink-  
“ ing and carousing at every public house in  
“ the parish; while his wife, not to be less  
“ genteel than he, scraped an acquaintance  
“ some how at a puppet-show with one of her  
“ ladyship’s maids, from whom she learned all  
“ those fantastic airs, and became so fine a  
“ gentlewoman, that she would scarce vouch-  
“ safe to take the least notice of the green-  
“ grocer’s or haberdasher’s wife, at the next  
“ door, or indeed any of her old neighbours  
“ in the village, with whom she had been in-  
“ timate before. The consequence of this was,  
“ that while she was learning fashions, among  
“ her ladyship’s maids, and he tippling at the  
“ tavern with my lord’s men, or perhaps treat-  
“ ing them at his own house, his shop was  
“ neglected, and his business left at sixes and  
“ sevens.

“ But their folly is still aggravated by this  
“ circumstance, that the persons, for the sake  
“ of whose company they do all this, laugh  
“ at them the whole time, and would not fail  
“ to turn their very ruin into ridicule. Of this  
“ they both have had instances enough to open  
“ the eyes of any who were resolved not to  
“ see. One or two of these may not be unen-  
“ tertaining.

“ As the wife’s education had been entirely  
“ in the country, her father took pleasure in  
“ seeing her practise all the rural sports he had  
“ formerly excelled in himself; by which  
“ means she could soon cudgel, vault, and play  
“ at cricket as well as any of the rustic swains  
“ around



“ around her. Of these polite accomplishments  
 “ she could not forbear boasting, in the pride  
 “ of her heart to her new acquaintance; who,  
 “ to humour her vanity, and expose her folly,  
 “ not only seemed to approve of them, but al-  
 “ so mischievously encouraged her to display  
 “ her dexterity at them in public company,  
 “ while, under a sneer of seeming applause, she  
 “ joined in the general laugh against her.

“ There is nothing that betrays a weak head,  
 “ into more or grosser absurdities, than imita-  
 “ tion. The great emulation among the fe-  
 “ male sex at present is, who shall gather the  
 “ greatest number of persons, no matter whe-  
 “ ther of their acquaintance or not, or how in-  
 “ famous in life or character, provided they  
 “ dress well, and will game, at those nocturnal  
 “ meetings, called with emphatical propriety,  
 “ *Routs*.

“ As this woman’s new acquaintance was  
 “ particularly famous for the multitudes that  
 “ always assembled on these occasions, she too  
 “ must have her *Routs*, to shew her politeness  
 “ and importance. An affair of such conse-  
 “ quence required much deliberation. Whom  
 “ to invite, and whereto put them, were the two  
 “ material questions. The way to the parlour  
 “ was through the shop; that therefore would  
 “ not do by any means; and the room up-  
 “ stairs, which for fashion-sake was called the  
 “ dining-room, was so little, that three females  
 “ in full dress could not move in it together.

“ After much consultation, a lucky thought  
 “ at length removed both the difficulties. As  
 “ the route was desired out of pure respect to  
 “ her new acquaintance, she judged that it  
 “ would

“ would not be proper to invite any person to  
“ it, who was not not a fit companion for her.  
“ This reduced the number to the constable’s  
“ wife, and two or three more, and even these  
“ were desired to come without their hoops,  
“ that they might not incommode her, a com-  
“ pliment, that it was thought could not fail to  
“ please her. These difficulties being thus  
“ happily got over, the lady was applied to, to  
“ fix her own time, and cards of invitation  
“ sent accordingly to the rest of the intended:  
“ company.

“ But an unlucky accident had like to have  
“ spoiled all, in the very critical minute.  
“ When the dining-room was swept out clean,  
“ and lighted up in readiness, the mistress of  
“ the route went down, and sat in the par-  
“ lour to be at hand to receive her principal  
“ guest, before whose arrival she did not  
“ think it proper that the rest should go up  
“ stairs. While she waited thus, with heart  
“ pit a pat, for the rap at the door, the appren-  
“ tice, who had put on his sunday-cloaths to  
“ officiate as a servant out of livery on the oc-  
“ casion, happened to peep into the dining-  
“ room, and not seeing a great chair at the  
“ upper end of it, as he had observed in the  
“ club-room at the alehouse where he used  
“ some times to go for his master, he conclud-  
“ ed it was forgot in the hurry. He resolved  
“ therefore to correct such an over-sight, with-  
“ out saying any thing of the matter, that the  
“ surprize might enhance his merit with his  
“ mistress: accordingly he would not go down  
“ for his master’s smoaking-chair, that stood  
“ by the kitchen fire, but opening the bed-  
“ chamber

“ chamber to look for one there, he unluckily  
 “ cast his eye on the night-chair, by his mis-  
 “ tress’s bed-side, and never considering what  
 “ it was, brought it out, pan and all as it stood,  
 “ and placed it in state at the upper end of the  
 “ dining-room.

“ He had scarce finished this notable piece of  
 “ management, when a thundering at the door  
 “ proclaimed the lady’s arrival, to the whole  
 “ neighbourhood. The new-made groom of  
 “ the chambers instantly flew to his post, happy  
 “ in the thought of what he had done, and held  
 “ open the door, while his mistress shewed her  
 “ guests up stairs.

“ The lady, who of course led the way, no  
 “ sooner entered the room, than she was struck  
 “ with the sight of the uncouth piece of furni-  
 “ ture. Her delicacy instantly took the alarm,  
 “ she puckered her nostrils up to her eyes, and  
 “ turning away, exclaimed in a voice of disgust,  
 “ *Lard!* where am I got to.”

“ The mistress of the *route*, who brought  
 “ up the rear, and had not yet come into the  
 “ room to see the horrid sight, nor heard dis-  
 “ tinctly what the lady said, imagined she was  
 “ taken suddenly ill, and ran up to her to  
 “ know what was the matter. *Lard!* woman!  
 “ (snuffled her ladyship through her handker-  
 “ chief, which she held to her nose) where  
 “ have you brought me? What is that?

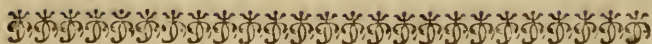
“ It is impossible to express the astonish-  
 “ ment and confusion of the other, when she  
 “ saw the unfortunate chair. Ruined and un-  
 “ done! (exclaimed she, as she fainted away  
 “ on the floor, where she lay for some time  
 “ before she could be brought to herself.)

“ In

“ In the mean while one of the compa-  
“ ny, perceiving the cause of all this con-  
“ fusion, ordered it to be taken away, and  
“ assuring her ladyship, that it must have  
“ been brought there by some mistake, as she  
“ herself had been in the room but a few mi-  
“ nutes before, when she could vouch that  
“ there was no such thing to be seen, her la-  
“ dyship was pacified; and, when the mistress  
“ of the house at length recovered, conde-  
“ scended to comfort her, and even staid four  
“ minutes longer than she had designed (for  
“ she had many visits to make that afternoon,  
“ and could not possibly sit down to cards) to  
“ shew that she was not offended; though, not-  
“ withstanding all her good-nature, she told  
“ the whole affair, with several ingenious il-  
“ lustrations of her own in every company she  
“ went into that night; which was the real  
“ motive of her being in such haste to go away.

“ But this ridiculous end of an affair, that  
“ cost the person before us so much anxie-  
“ ty, was not sufficient to make her see her  
“ folly. She goes on still in the same strain  
“ of awkward imitation, sacrificing every solid  
“ happiness of life to the absurd vanity of striv-  
“ ing to appear in a character for which nature  
“ never designed her.”





## C H A P. XIX.

*In what the great are easiest to be imitated. This humble ambition more dangerous, if less ridiculous, in man than in woman. Another interview with a couple of old acquaintances.*

“ **N**OR is her husband more fortunate in  
 “ his attempts of the same kind. Behold  
 “ him yonder, dozing off his last night’s de-  
 “ bauch. The virtues of the great are gene-  
 “ rally above the ambition of their inferiors;  
 “ but their follies and vices are of easy imi-  
 “ tation. By these they descend to the level  
 “ of the lowest part of the human species, who,  
 “ proud to resemble them in any thing, take  
 “ every opportunity of aping their example.  
 “ Hence those unnatural inconsistencies, which  
 “ offend reason in every view of life. Servant-  
 “ maids in silk gowns, and countesses drink-  
 “ ing gin. Tradesmen keeping whores, and  
 “ lords riding races.

“ The bloated features and bursting blood-  
 “ shot eyes of this person shew how eagerly he  
 “ imitates his betters in the most beastly vice  
 “ that can disgrace a rational being; but his  
 “ ambition stops not here. Resolved to be  
 “ upon an equal footing with the freeholders  
 “ of the manor, he has made interest to be put  
 “ upon the jury of the court-leet, that he may  
 “ have an opportunity of displaying his abili-  
 “ ties and consequence.

“ In

“ In speculation, it must appear advantageous  
 “ to have the trades-people admitted thus to  
 “ share in the government of the manor, as  
 “ they should naturally be supposed to under-  
 “ stand their own mysteries best, and for that  
 “ reason be most capable of making such regu-  
 “ lations as should promote trade, as well as  
 “ for their own interest, most careful to prevent  
 “ the land-holders from burdening it with  
 “ unjust or injudicious impositions.

“ But experience has proved the vanity of  
 “ such expectations. No sooner can a trades-  
 “ man get upon the jury, than instead of tak-  
 “ ing care of the interest of his trade in gene-  
 “ ral, he immediately enters into a combi-  
 “ nation with the lord’s servants ; and, for the  
 “ sake of bringing their custom to his own  
 “ shop, assists them to carry every by-law they  
 “ propose to serve any present purpose, how-  
 “ ever ruinous in its consequences to the very  
 “ trade in which he earns his bread. Thus,  
 “ for instance, a shoemaker, for the sake of  
 “ supplying shoes for his lordship’s labourers,  
 “ shall consent to lay a tax upon leather, that  
 “ must ruin his craft in the end : and if they  
 “ betray their own trades in this manner, what  
 “ will they scruple to do to others !

“ It is true, they take care to pay them-  
 “ selves well for this prostitution ; the badness  
 “ of the goods they supply giving them such  
 “ an exorbitant profit in their contracts, that  
 “ they expect soon to be, and too often re-  
 “ ally are, raised above the necessity of at-  
 “ tending to their business, at the same time  
 “ that the poor labourers, who are obliged to  
 “ take these goods as part of their wages, suf-  
 “ fer

“fer hardships, shocking to humanity, from  
 “this double dishonesty.

“But justice obliges me to acquit the per-  
 “son who gave occasion for these reflections  
 “from all such designs. Vanity was the sole  
 “motive for his getting upon the jury, and in  
 “the gratification of that consist his only plea-  
 “sure and employment; though this vanity  
 “is in its effect no less prejudicial, than the  
 “venality of the others; for, as the ambition  
 “of his shallow heart is to be upon good  
 “terms with his lordship’s servants, he never  
 “refuses any thing they require: so that the  
 “only difference between his conduct and  
 “that of the others is, that he does those dirty  
 “jobs for nothing which they do for hire.

“In contrast to these instances of vi-  
 “cious and absurd vanity, behold in yon tall  
 “meagre-looking person, and his wife, who sits  
 “behind him in the croud, instances of mean-  
 “ness, equally vicious and out of character.

“The place in which he stands shews the  
 “rank he holds among his lordship’s servants,  
 “to which he has been raised, not for any  
 “personal merit in himself, or liking of his  
 “master, but solely on account of the influ-  
 “ence which his wealth gives him among the  
 “tenants; he being possessed of the greatest  
 “property in the whole manor.

“It has been said that Heaven shews its  
 “disregard for riches, by the unworthy ob-  
 “jects on whom they are generally bestowed.  
 “The remark is rather witty than just; but,  
 “perhaps, there never could a stronger in-  
 “stance be alledged in support of it than this  
 “person. Though his wealth exceeds not  
 “only

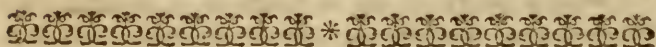
“ only the wants of nature and reason, but  
“ also almost the very wishes of avarice itself,  
“ his soul still yearns for more, with as much  
“ greediness as a wretch perishing of famine  
“ can for a morsel of bread. The whole bu-  
“ siness of his days, his dreams by night, are  
“ how to encrease his boundless store, to do  
“ which there is not a mean or iniquitous art  
“ invented by the perverted ingenuity of the  
“ human mind, when sharpened and made  
“ desperate by want, which he will not prac-  
“ tise.

“ Versed in the whole black mystery of gam-  
“ ing, how often has he drawn in unexperi-  
“ enced youth to ruin? How often have the  
“ rewards earned by the merits of illustrious  
“ ancestors, the fruits of the industry of ages,  
“ melted in the magic of his art, and sunk in-  
“ to his possession?

“ Nor is he content with this exertion of  
“ his skill, which, infamous as it really is,  
“ custom, that can efface the distinctions of  
“ nature, has sanctified it with the name of  
“ *polite*. For those whose fears may fortunately  
“ prevent their encountering him at his fa-  
“ vourite weapons, cards and dice, he spreads  
“ the inexplicable snares of usury, keeping a  
“ public office for lending money to all who  
“ can give him security on every contingency  
“ of life, the chances of which he has calcu-  
“ lated with such accuracy, that his expecta-  
“ tions of gain are seldom disappointed. And  
“ this is the source of his influence, there be-  
“ ing few of the tenants of the manor, and  
“ more especially of his lordship's servants,  
“ who are not in his debt. As for the place  
“ he



“ he holds in his lord’s service, he sought it  
 “ only for the lucrative emoluments which at-  
 “ tend it. Stranger to every praise-worthy  
 “ ambition, he sets honour at nought, and  
 “ grasps even at power, only as it brings him  
 “ profit.



## C H A P. XX.

*He that plays at BOWLS must meet RUBS. The biter DRUB'D. An old fox caught napping. A penny saved is a penny got. Splendid æconomy; with the unfortunate candle-adventure. A mortifying instance of the force of vanity.*

“ **I**N the occurrences of such a life, it is  
 “ not possible for all his art, consummate  
 “ as it is, to save him from some rubs. An  
 “ instance in each character of a gamester-  
 “ and an usurer, will gratify honest indigna-  
 “ tion.

“ Exerting his talents in the noble science  
 “ of *betting*, some time ago, at a cricket-  
 “ match, a butcher, whom he had taken in,  
 “ (for the first rule of gaming is, that it le-  
 “ vels all distinctions; a porter, who can  
 “ pull out a full purse, being equal to a  
 “ lord) was so provoked at being *bit*, that he  
 “ resolved to take satisfaction with his hands,  
 “ for the mistake of his head, and paid him with  
 “ a hearty *drubbing*.

“ Such an affair naturally made a noise ;  
“ but the sufferer had the address not only to  
“ evade the scandal, but even to turn it to  
“ his own advantage with his lord, making  
“ him believe that he had met with such an  
“ insult on account of his known attach-  
“ ment to his interest, the butcher being an  
“ avowed partizan of a certain gentleman’s,  
“ who was at that time going to law with his  
“ lordship for the best part of his estate.

“ But he did not come off so much to his  
“ own satisfaction in an affair that happened  
“ to him, some time after, in his other capacity  
“ of an usurer. A gentleman took up at his  
“ office a sum of money, payable at the death  
“ of an uncle to whom he was heir ; for which  
“ he mortgaged the reversion of his uncle’s  
“ estate : as he did not rightly understand *the*  
“ *calculations*, he agreed to pay an exorbitant  
“ premium ; but, his uncle dying very soon,  
“ when the usurer went to demand his debt,  
“ the gentleman expostulated with him on the  
“ unreasonableness of the terms which he had  
“ inadvertently submitted to, and offered him  
“ the sum he had borrowed, with an handsome  
“ gratuity, beside the interest allowed by the  
“ law. But the other, unmoved by any thing  
“ he could say, insisted positively on his whole  
“ demand, and threatened to seize upon the  
“ estate mortgaged to him, if it was not paid  
“ directly.

“ Incensed at such iniquitous extortion, the  
“ gentleman had immediate recourse to a learn-  
“ ed practitioner of the law, to try if he could  
“ not have redress ; who, on perusing the deeds  
“ which had been executed between them,  
“ found

“ found that, by an oversight of all parties,  
 “ the mortgage affected only a very small part  
 “ of his estate, which was not worth half the  
 “ sum lent, much less what was demanded; a  
 “ particular subdenomination only, which had  
 “ always been distinctly known from the rest,  
 “ being named in the deeds.

“ Though the gentleman was above taking  
 “ any dishonest advantage in such a case as  
 “ this, he thought it justifiable to fight the de-  
 “ vil at his own weapons, and defend himself  
 “ by any means he could; accordingly he sent  
 “ the usurer word, that, if he would not ac-  
 “ cept of his debt, with the bare legal interest,  
 “ he might take possession of the estate mort-  
 “ gaged to him, as soon as he pleased; but,  
 “ at the same time, let him know what that  
 “ estate was.

“ Surprized at such a message, the usurer in-  
 “ stantly sent for his lawyers, who, upon con-  
 “ sultation, informed him, that the affair was  
 “ too true, and the mistake now irremediable;  
 “ and, therefore, he must only strive to make  
 “ the best he could of it. When he had vent-  
 “ ed his rage on his agents and lawyer, and  
 “ cursed himself for confiding in them, he was  
 “ not ashamed to go in person to the gentle-  
 “ man, to try if he could not prevail upon  
 “ him, at least to give him the gratuity he had  
 “ offered at first. But his arguments were  
 “ now as ineffectual as the gentleman’s had  
 “ been before; and, for once, he was obliged  
 “ to take only his just debt, where he had  
 “ thought himself secure of sinking the whole  
 “ estate.

“ While he labours with this assiduity to  
 “ heap up wealth by every iniquitous means,  
 “ his wife is equally diligent in her province,  
 “ practising every species of parsimony, how-  
 “ ever scandalous and unjust, to cut off her  
 “ tradesmen’s bills, and shorten the most ne-  
 “ cessary expences of life by saving from the  
 “ very bellies of her servants; for, however  
 “ her fortune may seem to raise her above at-  
 “ tention to such minute œconomy, there is  
 “ nothing by which money can possibly be got  
 “ that she thinks beneath her. An affair that  
 “ happened not long since, will shew this in  
 “ the strongest light.

“ It has been remarked, that the most oppo-  
 “ site and apparently irreconcilable passions  
 “ often spring from the same cause, and in-  
 “ habit the same breast. The profusion that,  
 “ in a particular manner, marks the character  
 “ of the present age, is blended with an avarice  
 “ so strong, as to seem capable of coun-  
 “ teracting all it’s effects. An incontestible  
 “ instance of this is the mean practice which  
 “ prevails among those whose elevated rank  
 “ makes them lead the mode, of permitting  
 “ their servants to receive hire from their  
 “ guests. Upon this practice some of supe-  
 “ rior œconomy have improved so far as to  
 “ lay a tax upon it, and bargain with their  
 “ footmen to defray a great part of the ex-  
 “ pence of their entertainments out of these  
 “ scandalous perquisites.

“ But even this did not satisfy this lady.  
 “ Her rank, as well as her eager passion for  
 “ play, laid her under a kind of necessity of  
 “ making a splendid appearance, and invit-  
 “ ing



“ ing as much company as she could to her  
 “ gaming parties. I have observed that the  
 “ expence of these entertainments was borne  
 “ by the servants. But still there was one  
 “ thing which she had set her heart upon,  
 “ though custom had not yet given her a  
 “ right to it; this was the pieces of candles  
 “ that remained after the company retired  
 “ from her *routes*, which she thought would  
 “ serve in her family on ordinary occasions,  
 “ and save the expence of buying; but how  
 “ to get them was the difficulty, as the foot-  
 “ men who found the lights, retained them  
 “ as their due.

“ At length, one night, when the compa-  
 “ ny by some accident broke up much sooner  
 “ than ordinary, so that the candles were not  
 “ half burnt out, she was not able to resist  
 “ the temptation, but resolved to have them  
 “ some way or other. Accordingly, as soon  
 “ as the hurry was over, and the servants, as  
 “ she thought, all gone to sleep, she stole  
 “ out of her bed, and went down stairs, naked  
 “ to her shift as she was, with a design to  
 “ steal them; which she imagined she might  
 “ easily do, as the servants, impatient to get  
 “ to rest after their fatigue, used only to blow  
 “ them out, and to leave them in the candle-  
 “ sticks, till they went to clean up the rooms  
 “ next morning.

“ It happened unluckily that one of the  
 “ footmen suspected some of his fellows had  
 “ found a way of opening the box, in which  
 “ their alms-money (for, literally, they stood  
 “ like beggars to receive it) was kept, till it  
 “ was divided, and resolved to be upon the

“ watch this night, to try if he could discover  
 “ the thief.

“ He had not waited long, when he heard  
 “ his mistress treading softly through the  
 “ apartments ; and imagining that she was the  
 “ person he watched for, ( for there was no  
 “ light to let him see who it was ) he stood  
 “ still till she came to him, and then, spread-  
 “ ing his arms in her way, caught her, load-  
 “ ed as she was with the pieces of candles,  
 “ with which she had filled the fore-part of  
 “ her shift ; for she had, in her haste, for-  
 “ got to bring any thing to carry them off  
 “ in.

“ It is easy to conceive her surprize and  
 “ confusion at such an encounter ; nor was  
 “ the fellow’s much less. But the discovery  
 “ of her situation soon restored him to his  
 “ senses, and instantly suggested the method  
 “ of his revenge. “ And so, my dear, ( said  
 “ he ) you want wax-candles ! But I’ll make  
 “ you pay for your pilfering.” Saying which  
 “ he prepared to gratify a passion more na-  
 “ tural at least, if not more delicate, than  
 “ that which had brought her into such a  
 “ scrape.

“ The lady, who could not be at a loss  
 “ to know what he designed, was in the  
 “ highest distress. Her *virtue* instantly took  
 “ the alarm at such an attempt ; but how to  
 “ avoid it was the difficulty. If she spoke  
 “ to refuse him, she knew her voice would  
 “ betray her, and she should be exposed for  
 “ ever, at the same time that the fear of losing  
 “ her booty prevented her letting go her hold  
 “ to struggle with him, and strive to repel  
 “ force

“ force by force. It is not easy to say what  
 “ resolution she would have taken in such an  
 “ embarrassment; or, indeed, whether she  
 “ would have taken any before it was too  
 “ late, had not a very singular circumstance  
 “ most unexpectedly proved the safeguard of  
 “ her honour.

“ The fellow had scarce taken her in his  
 “ arms, when the perfumes, which steamed  
 “ from every part of her, gave such offence  
 “ to his nostrils, accustomed to no stinks but  
 “ those of nature, that, his stomach instantly  
 “ turning, he discharged its contents full in  
 “ her face, before he had time to let her go;  
 “ and then, damning her for a stinking brim-  
 “ stone, spurned her from him with abhor-  
 “ rence. As soon as she had wiped her face  
 “ with her sleeve, and recovered her breath,  
 “ she picked up some of the candles which she  
 “ had dropped, and retired, the manner of her  
 “ deliverance a good deal lessening the plea-  
 “ sure of it; though it was some satisfaction  
 “ to her, however, to think that she had  
 “ preserved her booty, and escaped undiscover-  
 “ ed.

“ But, in the latter, she soon had the mor-  
 “ tification to find herself deceived. The fel-  
 “ low told the whole story, with some obvious  
 “ additions, to all the servants next morning  
 “ at breakfast, when her waiting-woman,  
 “ (from whom she could not possibly conceal  
 “ some part of it, as she was obliged to have  
 “ recourse to her assistance to get herself clean-  
 “ ed; though at the same time she gave her  
 “ the strictest charge not to mention a syl-  
 “ lable of the matter, laying it upon her hus-

“band, who, she said, had drank a little too  
 “freely the night before) her woman, I say,  
 “out of a principle of conscience, and that  
 “none of her innocent fellow-servants should  
 “be under such a scandalous aspersions, be-  
 “trayed the whole secret to them all, from  
 “whom, through the channel of intelligence  
 “of their fraternity, it soon spread over the  
 “whole village.

“The feast, you see, is finished, at which  
 “you must have observed that the hospitable  
 “entertainers and their guests seemed to have  
 “exchanged characters; the former, willing  
 “to have something for their money, eating  
 “as voraciously as if they were half starved,  
 “and never expected to meet so good a meal  
 “again; while the latter have been wholly taken  
 “up in looking about them, and making good-  
 “natured remarks on every thing they have  
 “seen. But, soft! a curious scene yonder  
 “demands your attention for a moment, after  
 “which we will return to the lady’s husband  
 “again, who will supply more matter for your  
 “observation.”

Just as my guide said this, I heard an up-  
 roar at the door of the house, and, turning  
 about to see what was the occasion of it, was  
 witness to a scene sufficiently ridiculous to  
 have put vanity itself out of countenance.

As his lordship’s late agent, who had been in-  
 vited by the villagers to their feast, was going  
 away, a parcel of attorneys clerks and bai-  
 liffs, who had been employed by him while he  
 conducted the law-suit, gathered about him,  
 and insisted on carrying him in triumph to  
 his own house on their shoulders.

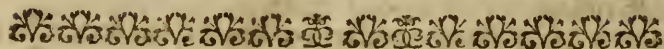
The



The zeal of the poor fellows on this occasion was natural. The agent had given them constant employment, in which, to do them justice, they had earned their wages very well, and on his losing his place they apprehended the suit would be made up some how, and they should want work; they therefore took this method of testifying their grateful regard for him, which they imagined might also convey an advantageous opinion of them to his successor; but the affected modesty with which he faintly repelled their attempts, while the vanity of his heart glistened through the thin disguise, shewed in the most mortifying light the inability of man's boasted reason to resist the impulse of the most contemptible passions. The sight was too painful; I turned away, vexed and disgusted, while he went off intoxicated with their empty shouts and applause.

The tumult and confusion at the breaking up of the company are not to be described. "You see (said my guide) the conclusion of an affair that raised such expectation. The life of man has not unaptly been compared to a feast, from whence some depart empty, others satiated; and all unsatisfied and disappointed, and as impatient to get away as they were eager to come. We will leave the entertainers to congratulate themselves on their elegant taste and judicious conduct in this important matter, to spread the fame of which they have resolved to hire the common crier, to proclaim the bill of fare of their sumptuous entertainment at the market-cross, and follow that person who,

“ as I told you, will soon do something that  
 “ shall compleat his character.”



## CH A P. XXI.

*Interesting hints, which set some matters much canvassed in a new light.*

AS soon as his lordship was returned home from the feast, his servants met together to consult upon the conduct proper for them to observe in the present critical conjuncture. “ While these people are making the unmeaning preambles (said my guide) with which the most urgent business must be ushered in, I’ll give you a few leading hints, to enable you to enter the reader into the spirit of the scene opening before you.

“ You must have observed that the bubble of the day, the subject that engrosses the thoughts of all the inhabitants of the manor, is the law-suit in which they are at present engaged. About this they are divided into two parties, directly opposite to each other in their opinions; one for prosecuting it with the utmost vigour, without considering what consequences may attend such a conduct, or setting any limits to their expectations; the other, for compounding the dispute almost at any rate, to save the expence of carrying it on. At the head of the latter is the person whom we have followed hither; as the former flatter them-  
 “ selves

“ selves that they have the late agent on their  
 “ side, because he had conducted it with  
 “ judgment and spirit, while he was in his  
 “ office.

“ It is hard to say which of these parties  
 “ acts on the most irrational principles. The  
 “ One, from a mean and absurd motive of  
 “ parsimony, would betray the honour of their  
 “ lord, and the interest of the manor; the  
 “ other, composed principally of the various  
 “ retainers of the law, and tradesmen who  
 “ make an advantage of supplying them with  
 “ goods, on the lord’s account, from motives  
 “ equally selfish, though disguised under the  
 “ pompous pretext of public spirit, and a pas-  
 “ sion for glory, which never fail to take  
 “ with the mob, are for pushing on their suc-  
 “ cesses against the dictates of reason and jus-  
 “ tice, magnifying every advantage that has  
 “ been gained as of the most essential im-  
 “ portance, and not only grasping at more,  
 “ but also insisting on keeping all they have  
 “ gotten ; while the former with equal sincerity  
 “ decry them as insignificant, and not worth  
 “ the trouble and expence of acquiring, much  
 “ less of retaining, and therefore are for giv-  
 “ ving up them all indiscriminately.

“ In the same manner do they differ about  
 “ the conduct to be observed with some of  
 “ their neighbours, who have taken part with  
 “ them in the dispute ; these are for dropping  
 “ them directly, and leaving them to shift for  
 “ themselves as well as they can, without re-  
 “ gard to any promises which may have been  
 “ made them to the contrary, or to their be-  
 “ ing drawn into the scrape, merely because

“ of their being some way connected with this  
 “ manor; as the others are for supporting  
 “ them, right or wrong, without ever confi-  
 “ dering whether they are able to bear such an  
 “ expence, or not.

“ It is obvious that the right course lies in  
 “ the middle between these opinions, could  
 “ their directors divest themselves of preju-  
 “ dice, to discern and find resolution to pur-  
 “ sue it. As the suit was entered into at first  
 “ not wantonly, or from a litigious disposi-  
 “ tion, but to assert a legal right, and recover  
 “ losses unjustly suffered, it would be both  
 “ dishonourable and weak to drop it before  
 “ those ends are obtained; and if in the course  
 “ of the contest some acquisitions have been  
 “ made, which were not originally even claim-  
 “ ed, the voice of reason directs to retain as  
 “ many of them as shall indemnify for the ex-  
 “ pences of the law-suit, and disable the ag-  
 “ gressors from attempting the like injustice  
 “ for the future; as, on the other hand, when  
 “ that right is incontestibly established, and  
 “ not only those losses recovered, but also a  
 “ sufficient indemnification for the past, and  
 “ security against the future obtained, to grasp  
 “ at more inverts the nature of the contest,  
 “ and makes those the aggressors who before  
 “ had justice on their side.

“ The same middle rule holds equally good  
 “ in respect to their associates in the suit; such  
 “ of them as have been involved in it merely  
 “ on account of their connection with the ma-  
 “ nor, should most certainly be protected;  
 “ that is, if it can be done without ruining  
 “ their protectors; farther than which nothing



“ can oblige a community to go. Where that  
 “ cannot be, self-preservation cancels every  
 “ tie; and prudence commands to yield to a  
 “ necessity that cannot be resisted, till an hap-  
 “ pier hour shall offer for redressing their  
 “ grievances, and making them amends for  
 “ their losses; and for those who may have  
 “ entered into the dispute, to serve particular  
 “ purposes of their own, or for the sake of  
 “ hire, it is abusing honour to say that it is  
 “ any way concerned to keep up a connection  
 “ with them, one moment longer than it is  
 “ convenient. All that is necessary to be done  
 “ is, not to break with them without giving  
 “ them timely notice to provide for their own  
 “ safety.

“ Of this the steward is not insensible; but,  
 “ though he is secure of his lord's concurrence  
 “ in whatever he thinks proper to do, there  
 “ are difficulties in his way, which make him  
 “ at a loss how to proceed, and imbitter the  
 “ enjoyment of his envied power. The par-  
 “ ty which is for continuing the suit is against  
 “ him of course, from the circumstance of his  
 “ coming into the management of affairs in  
 “ the place of their favourite, the late agent;  
 “ (as for the old steward, though some of  
 “ them perhaps have not yet forgot the good  
 “ cheer he used to give them, as they have no  
 “ opinion of his capacity for business, they  
 “ give themselves no great concern about his  
 “ dismissal) and even the more rational of  
 “ those who wish to see the dispute termin-  
 “ ated, in an amicable and just manner, are  
 “ afraid he will be in such haste to make it  
 “ up, in hopes of securing himself in his place,  
 “ that

“ that he will not take sufficient care of their  
 “ interests, nor make the most of the advan-  
 “ tages gained by his predecessor, for fear any  
 “ part of the merit should redound to him.

“ Opposed thus by one party, and distrusted  
 “ by the other, he stands in the utmost em-  
 “ barrassment, unable to follow the dictates  
 “ of his own judgment, and obliged to adopt  
 “ the measures of those who alone will join  
 “ with him. These are they who are for  
 “ *compounding* matters at any rate, at the  
 “ head of whom is this person, who, as his  
 “ great property makes a large portion of the  
 “ expence of the suit fall to his share, has  
 “ ever been averse to carrying it on, *weeping*  
 “ over the successes which have attended it, as  
 “ he imagined they would raise the expecta-  
 “ tions of the tenants still higher, and con-  
 “ sequently make the composition he wanted  
 “ to bring about more difficult.

“ I have drawn this short sketch, to assist  
 “ your judgment in a matter which preju-  
 “ dice and party represent in such different  
 “ colours. To some, perhaps, the concerns  
 “ of a private manor may not seem worth so  
 “ much trouble; but the heart of man, and  
 “ the motives of his actions, which are the ob-  
 “ jects of your observation, are often as clear-  
 “ ly shewn in such trifles as in matters of the  
 “ greatest moment. “ But soft! the grand de-  
 “ bate begins.”



## C H A P. XXII.

*Disputes will arise, where every man is for himself. A sure method of removing scruples, and reconciling opposite opinions. The character of the GRAND COMPOUNDER finished. The conclusion.*

COMPLIMENTS being mutually paid, and judgment passed upon the feast, and the dress and characters of the entertainers and their various guests, the company at length seated themselves round a table, and the steward proceeded to business.

“ I have desired this meeting, gentlemen, (said he) that I may have your advice how to act in the affair of this law-suit in which we are entangled. Whether it is to be carried on, or made up? and how we are to accomplish which ever we resolve upon? It is a matter of consequence, and requires the most deliberate care and attention.”

“ Whether the law-suit is to be carried on, or made up, sir! (answered the grand compounder) cannot admit of a moment’s doubt with any one who considers the distressed situation to which we are reduced by it. All our ready money is gone, and our farms mortgaged so deeply that no one will lend us any more. How then should we carry it on, if we were so inclined? Or, how far are we to go, even if we were able? When first

“ we

“ we begun it, we were told that a term or  
 “ two would certainly bring our adversary to  
 “ reason. But we have gone on, term after  
 “ term, I don’t know how long, at an ex-  
 “ pence that no other people upon earth would  
 “ be such fools as to undertake ; and still are as  
 “ far from a conclusion as the moment we set  
 “ out. As for the mighty advantages, which  
 “ the lawyers and their party make such a noise  
 “ about, what have they done but filled our  
 “ wise heads with notions of new demands,  
 “ which our adversary will never comply with ;  
 “ and we should not have dreamed of making,  
 “ had it not been for them : So that, the more  
 “ advantages as they are called we gain, the  
 “ farther we are from the conclusion we wish  
 “ for. The lawyers, indeed, have gained  
 “ advantages. They receive their fees from  
 “ us, and extort costs from the adversary also ;  
 “ which, in our great wisdom, we have given  
 “ up to them, as an encouragement to be ho-  
 “ nest, instead of reimbursing ourselves with  
 “ them as we ought ; and therefore they are in  
 “ the right to spin out the suit as long as they  
 “ can. But I hope their reign is at an end ; and  
 “ that we have seen our folly too plainly, to  
 “ be dupes to them any longer. My opinion,  
 “ therefore, Mr. Steward is, that we compound  
 “ the matter directly. We must take care of  
 “ ourselves. *Any* composition in our case is  
 “ better than *none*.”

“ It is to be hoped (replied one who sat at  
 “ the other side of the table, and by his green  
 “ bag full of papers, appeared to be their clerk  
 “ in court) that Mr. Steward will have more  
 “ regard to his own character (a consideration  
 “ that



“ that appears to have lost all weight with the  
 “ gentleman who spoke last; as well as to his  
 “ lordship’s honour and the interest of the ma-  
 “ nor, than to be influenced by such sordid, base  
 “ advice. It has been owing to such scandalous  
 “ complaints of our inability to carry on the  
 “ suit, that it has continued so long, they only  
 “ having encouraged our adversary to persist,  
 “ not from any hope of getting the better of us  
 “ fairly, but of wearing out our resolution;  
 “ and if this is not directly betraying his lord-  
 “ ship, the consequence is just as bad.”

So home a charge put the *compounder* out of  
 all patience. He started up, sputtering and  
 foaming like a madman, for his passion had  
 deprived him of the power of utterance, and,  
 tearing open his waistcoat, was going to de-  
 mand instant satisfaction from his accuser.  
 But a gentleman who sat at the upper end of  
 the table interposed, and catching hold of his  
 hand, “ For heaven’s sake, Sir, (said he) how  
 “ can you take notice of what he says? The  
 “ gentleman perhaps thinks that he will have  
 “ no more business, if the suit should be made  
 “ up, and therefore says any thing to support  
 “ it. But you have a fortune of your own,  
 “ and do not depend upon the precarious in-  
 “ come of a place.”

“ Whatever I depend on, (returned the  
 “ clerk eagerly) I do not prostitute my honour  
 “ and abilities, and make myself the hackney  
 “ tool of every party that is uppermost, to  
 “ keep that place, changing like a weather-  
 “ cock with every gust of wind, and counter-  
 “ acting one day the measures of the last, as  
 “ I happen to be ordered.”

Such

Such reflections were too general. Every mouth was instantly opened to reply, when the steward commanding silence, with a tone and air of authority, "I was in hopes, gentlemen (said he) that you would have thought proper to deliberate coolly on the matter I proposed to you; but, instead of that, you have fallen out among yourselves, and that about nothing at all. You may all be assured, that whatever measures I take, no gentleman here shall be a sufferer. You, Mr. Clerk need not be so warm! If the suit is made up, there are other places as profitable as the one you have at present. I design to make you first clerk in my own office, which I hope will remove all your scruples; and on the other hand, if it cannot be made up quite so readily as you, Sir, (addressing himself to the *grand compounder*) may wish, there are ways of making up to you, not only what you may suffer by the delay, but also a good part of what you have been out of pocket already: so that you had no occasion for being so much alarmed at what the gentleman said, nor stripping to fight with him, like a porter. Such wrangling is most unbecoming gentlemen."

This speech healed all animosities, and restored the general harmony in a moment. The clerk bowed with a smile of the most chearful acquiescence; and the *grand compounder*, unable to conceal his joy, blubbered out, between laughing and crying, "I am sorry, Sir, that I should misbehave myself before you; but it was impossible to bear such an aspersions unmoved. I am sure I have shewn my  
 " at-

“ attachment to his lordship’s honour and in-  
 “ terest in many different instances, in the  
 “ several capacities I have served him in.  
 “ When I was *coxswain of his barge*, I  
 “ obliged his watermen to wear a particular  
 “ livery, at their own expence, and regulated  
 “ their rank; and t’other day again, when I  
 “ was steward of the manor on the other side  
 “ of the river, I drove away that *smuggler* and  
 “ his gang who put them all into such a pa-  
 “ nick, by the great preparations which I  
 “ made to attack them; and even in this very  
 “ affair of the law-suit, I have been at greater  
 “ expence than any man in the whole manor;  
 “ and it is very hard if a man may not even  
 “ speak who parts with so much money for  
 “ nothing. I am sure it has gone to my heart  
 “ many a time, when I have given away the  
 “ rent of a whole farm at once! After all this,  
 “ I say, it is too much to be accused of be-  
 “ traying his interest and honour. But, as I  
 “ can depend upon your word, I shall think  
 “ no more of it.”

When the *grand compounder* had thus unbur-  
 dened his heart, the steward once more re-  
 sumed the subject of their meeting. “ As for  
 “ this law-suit, gentlemen, (said he) I own I  
 “ am heartily tired of it, as I presume every  
 “ man in his senses is; and am determined to  
 “ make it up as soon as I can, that is, without  
 “ prejudice to his lordship’s honour and the  
 “ real interest of the manor, which, however  
 “ some people may pretend to distinguish be-  
 “ tween them, are essentially one and the same  
 “ thing. But how to bring this about is the  
 “ difficulty. The mob is intoxicated with  
 “ our

“our successes to such a degree, that they  
 “would be ready to drag any man through  
 “the kennel who should only mention stop-  
 “ping, though they do not even know what  
 “they would be at, in going on. In these cir-  
 “cumstances, I think it will be the best way  
 “to let our adversary privately know, that  
 “we are not averse to an accommodation;  
 “and that if he will send one of his people  
 “here with such a proposal, to give a colour  
 “to the affair, one of us will go to him, with  
 “full power to settle all matters in dispute  
 “between us. In the mean while we must  
 “let the lawyers go on, at least till the end of  
 “the term, to keep the mob in good humour;  
 “and when the affair is finished, we must con-  
 “trive to throw some new bubble or other up  
 “in the air, for them to gaze at, which may  
 “divert their attention from every thing else.  
 “This, gentlemen, is my opinion: I only am  
 “at a loss for a proper person to send. It  
 “must be one of some consequence, to give  
 “weight to what he says, and who does not  
 “regard the abuse and insults of the mob, of  
 “which he will probably be the chief object;  
 “in the first sallies of their resentment, before  
 “there can be any thing done to appease them.”

“I am the man! (said the *grand compounder*,  
 “starting up in a transport) I am the man!  
 “I have given proof, that I defy the resent-  
 “ment of the most desperate mob; and no  
 “person’s word will have more weight with  
 “our adversary than mine. I am intimately  
 “acquainted with most of his principal ser-  
 “vants, with whom I have all along kept up  
 “a friendly intercourse; which has made him  
 “think



“ think that I am well inclined to his interest ;  
 “ so that he will have proper regard to every  
 “ thing I propose. Let me but go ; and I will  
 “ undertake to settle every thing.”

“ With all my heart, Sir, (answered the  
 “ steward) you shall go, since you desire it.  
 “ But take care that your eagerness is not seen  
 “ through, and taken advantage of. I’ll draw  
 “ up your instructions without delay, and give  
 “ you a sum of money to bear your charges,  
 “ that shall make you easy ; for I know you are  
 “ not extravagant in your expences.”

“ And do, pray Sir, (added the *grand com-*  
 “ *pounder*) add some little matter on my wife’s  
 “ account. I know she will be for going too.  
 “ It will not be thrown away : she has an ex-  
 “ cellent knack at fishing out secrets, and will  
 “ be a great assistance to me.”

“ Well Sir, (returned the steward) we shall  
 “ not differ about that. But, gentlemen, there  
 “ is one thing more, which I must observe to  
 “ you. As you all approve of this step, I  
 “ shall expect that when the accommodation is  
 “ concluded, you will all sign it as well as I ;  
 “ for light as some people make of the resent-  
 “ ment of a mob, I do not chuse to stand  
 “ single before it neither.”

Matters being thus settled, the company  
 broke up ; and the *grand compounder*, in the  
 fullness of his joy, muttering to himself as he  
 passed me, “ Aye ! aye ! let me alone to com-  
 “ pound matters ! I shall not stand upon terms.  
 “ *Any* composition is better than *none* !” I was  
 so provoked at his premeditated baseness, that,  
 forgetting the positive injunction of my guide,  
 I could not forbear crying out aloud, “ Vil-  
 “ lain !

“lain ! take that !” and at the same time gave him a kick on the posteriors with all my might.

But I soon had reason to repent of my rashness. The whole scene instantly vanished ! I awoke from my *Reverie* ; and found myself sitting in the same chair, where I had forgot myself a few hours before, with the additional vexation of having broken my shin against the frame of the table by my inconsiderate kick.

F I N I S.

E R R A T A.

Vol. I. Page 11. line 7. *Dele*, with my mother.  
—————line 8. *For* (her fortune) *read*,  
his wife's fortune) &c.

*John Smith*

Oct 25 '37.

Oct 26, 39



827.69

J72R

V.2

19711

